



# The Lessons

THE ORDER MATERIAL

## Table of Contents

Lesson #1: Listen Up! .....	1
Lesson #2: The Rooms where Dreams Occur - I.....	2
Lesson #3: The Rooms where Dreams Occur - II .....	13
Lesson #4: “The Agony of Conscience” – What have you done for You lately? ...	22
Lesson #5: The Rooms Where Dreams Occur – III .....	27
Lesson #6: Eternity Never Stops Waiting.....	37
Lesson #7: A Live Teaching - Lucid Dreams – I .....	45
Lesson #8: Lucid Dreams – II .....	72
Lesson #9: Lucid Dreams - III.....	89
Lesson #10: Lucid Dreams - IV.....	101
Lesson #11: Volition – “The Power of The Mind of Christ” .....	116
Lesson #12: Self-Mastery and Mind Control – Yours and Others .....	134
A Preface to Lesson #13	
To The “Reader” of The Order of 13 .....	148
An Issue .....	150
Lesson #13: The “Seeing” and “Hearing” of a Practicing Spirit Guide... ..	153
Lesson #14: Lucid Dreams V .....	344
Lesson #15: Lucid Dreams VI.....	370
NOWHERE: Excerpts from The Message .....	388

## Lesson #1

### Listen Up!

Greetings: My dear brothers and sisters, you of The Order of Thirteen listen up.

If you would spend less time being so damned Critical and so damned Judgmental about me and turned All that Inwardly, both you and me would be better people.

If you are always wanting me to impress you, who in hell do you think you are ever going to impress? Not me, that's for sure - and most certainly Never Yourself!

Think about This. Think about the Ordinance of Formative Causation. We will get back to this to examine your thoughts.

Love,

I, Paul. S.G.

## **Lesson #2: The Rooms where Dreams Occur - I**

Greetings to you my dear brothers, sisters and Partners,  
you of The 13.

Almost everybody dreams while in the sleep state and these dreams can be set into four primary categories whether they be colorless dreams or colorful dreams:

1. Mental
2. Emotional
3. Physical
4. Spiritual

To sleep is to trance. To dream in one's sleep is the High Trance State of the sleep state trance.

Whether one dreams in color or black and white is really not significant of anything important. When one dreams in one color or one color dominates the dream then that color has significance of some importance.

As regards the four categories listed above we should mention here that under Number Four, "Spiritual," we include the following:

Precognition

Retrocognition

Telepathy

Clairvoyance

OBE's

Prophecy

Furthermore, many dreams and or nightmares are the direct result of fear wherein no specific message is being conveyed. We call this sleep state "dream insanity" of the dream "self." In spite of this "dream insanity" we must keep in mind that most dreams contain a very specific message for the dreamer and, quite often, for persons other than the dreamer. All dreams, other than those cited above, contain a message and almost always all of the dream categories listed above are included in that dream.

To all those individuals who do not believe that dreams hold messages and give guidance to the dreamer along psychical lines I can only say that once I dreamed a lot and now that I have done all the things that I have done I no longer dream, period! You see, you who have been following the directions of the Message exactly as given and have diligently been recording your dreams were and are even today bearing witness that you have not transcended. A True Transcender does not dream - cannot dream - has NO Need to dream - You cannot dream but you can, do, and must and will until you also transcend. Now you know one of my secrets.

The most real significance of All dreams is the truth that they are a psychical phenomenon specifically designed to either create something or to Destroy something and I can think of no greater testimony to this Truth than the files on Edgar Cayce in the A.R.E. He was a True Dreamer – never a dreamer. In contrast I am a Dreamer who never dreams and this is exactly what All 13 of you Need Become!

Dreamers need to be discerners. Non-dreamers simply need to obey. Dreamers have vast areas in which to roam. Transcenders have no place in which to walk.

Since almost all people dream, I believe it proper here to ask a question and then give it an answer. The question is “What is this phenomenon we call dream”? Very simply put dreams are perceptions without the conscious use of the ordinary senses. ESP is perception without the use of the recognized senses – such as telepathy.

This raises another question. Are dreams and ESP one and the same thing, the same phenomenon? The answer lies in the correct discernment of what is meant by “ordinary senses” and “recognized senses” in the last two sentences of the preceding paragraph – the “key” to both sentences is the use of the term in the first sentence of “conscious use.”

Now as an informative exercise I am going to let you,

The 13, to discern these questions both individually and finally collectively. I leave the manner and the method entirely up to you and your collective knowledge of The Message and your Spiritual powers and perceptions. Leaving, then, this discernment up to all of you let us go on.

There are many rooms in your house and many windows in these rooms but only one closet downstairs and one upstairs and the cellar is always dark. Most are one minded upstairs, of another mind downstairs and of no mind in the cellar. Ideally Common Sense resides Upstairs, common sense downstairs and nonsense in the cellar. It would, therefore, seem intelligent to stay out of the cellar, rearrange the downstairs and leaving it clean and comfortable, move upstairs.

Your dreams can assist you in this relocation to a more permanent and rewarding residency.

You have already been instructed to take ideas and questions and problems into your meditations (low and middle) to find solutions and now you must also learn to do exactly the same thing with your sleep dream states, which are, actually, sub-conscious or subliminal meditations which, at the moment, you cannot control but can. You can take your Creative Thought and Creative Imagination into

the dream sleep state in the same manner you can take them into your meditative states by simply predetermining that if you do not find your solution in the low or middle meditative states you will go on into the sleep dreaming state and seek your answers there.

The problem with this seeking of answers and solutions in the sleep dreaming state is one of interpretation, of understanding, then, what the answer or the solution really is, and then being capable of carrying it to completion.

Right here is a very good place to tell you this: If you're overly curious of what Life after death here is all about take a good long serious look into your dreams that you do control and "see" that they are an excellent mirror of matters eternal. From this, you should be able to "see" also that Dreams are a "seed bed" for Creative Thought and Creative Imagination and are previews of not only Things to Come but also of those matters Predestined and those Retrogress-able. You are, then, quite clairvoyant while in the Sleep Dream State.

And if, you do have Extra Sensory Perception in the Trance States then you should be capable of transferring that Perception into your Conscious Awake States. You can but, as yet, you do not.

So how do you do this? How do you get to where you are not? Listen!

We want you to know everything but it's not free. Freedom is earned, not gifted. We want you to learn (and to learn is to practice) to say, and mean, "we," "us" instead of "I," "me." We want you to learn to say "ours" instead of "mine." We want you to become One Minded in all things Spiritual. We want you to learn and practice to Care, to Share, to be True Brothers and Sisters and Partners in Everything you do, in Everything you think, in Everything you learn, always helping each other, never placing obstacles in each other's way, physically, materially, spiritually, and wherever you go in this life you must keep "in touch" with one another.

You do not have to sleep to dream but you do have to be able to interpret sleep dreams if you wish to Understand the message of dreams and the guidance given through them. If you fear you do not love, you cannot love, it's impossible regardless of what you Think. The very curse of love is not hate, it's fear for that's what hate really is. Fear is hate and anger and contempt and bigotry and "self" expressing itself.

If you do not make your world right with the Spirit at the beginning and end of each day and diligently maintain

that Righteous frame of mind all the hours in between through Love and Trust and self-discipline, your dreams will always be meaningless, a product of the great wasteland of your carnal mind that is at home and receiving guests in the cellar. Every day and Every night of your life brings you face to face with a new Unknown and you must be Prepared to face them, one by one. We call these New Unknowns the Perpetual New NOWS and you must learn to stay up with them and utilize them to the advantage of the Well-Being of All in All. Even more important is the Need that you become capable of Creating New Nows through the Powers of your Minds, awake or asleep. The tasks of “The 13” are, then, Perpetual Action - no time, no calendar, no seasons, no minutes, no hours, no days, no weeks, no months, no years - just you, You, me, spirit and Spirits. And just as you keep in touch with one another you must also, then, keep in touch with Spirit.

Everybody lives and dies but most forget to “Live.” You must remember to Remember and Recognize to Recognize what you are and who really lives. Question: Are you really living? We can only answer that by asking another very pointed question. Have you fallen lately? If not, you are not trying hard enough and therefore, if not trying, you are not really living The Way you were intended to.

What I am going to reveal to you Now may strike you as strange but when you consider that the ways of the spirit are not yet your ways and the guidance of the spirit is not always what you would expect, then what I say here is really not strange at all.

The Ordinance of Formative Causation works in a very eerie but thorough Way. Since we are here speaking about Habit and Change, we are, then, speaking about a simple but unique way and manner of using one's totality of the Minds - the Ten Senses - the Mind of Christ and our own inherent powers. The use of this Ordinance can best be taught here by calling it "Fake it until you have made it." This is strictly personal, secretive fakery and not something you lay on others.

"Fake it until you have made it." What do you fake and what do you finally create by it? Example - you have a certain debilitating, to you, habit and you can't shake it, regardless. What you need to do then since nothing else has worked, is fake it. Consciously, but alertly, deny it. Take it into meditation and focusing only on this one habit deny that it is a habit - deny any association with it. Take it into your sleep state and make contact with it in your dream state and deny it, fake it, then. If you persist in this "self" fakery the change will come phenomenally "IF" you

are serious and sincere in your fakery. Tie into this Ordinance of Formative Causation the Reality that “The Truth” both Creates and Destroys and see if you “see” anything now.

This can of course be very dangerous ground but properly utilized and Righteously approached it can be very Fertile Ground. What we are dealing with here is the sub-conscious or subliminal consciousness. You establish a thought there, a belief there and it will Always Produce Itself - nothing more than and nothing less than - it simply cannot do otherwise. If you can just learn to plant the seeds in your Collective Unconscious you will become those good seeds and bear their fruits “IF’ you use the Conscious Mind in tandem with the sub-conscious powers.

During all this “fakery” no evil must be given a place in your thoughts, and if it is not then it can find no place in your life and is ruled out of your fakery as well as your life. You simply become what you Think collectively and, incidentally, that’s how you become Righteous.

Now you, The 13, are going to be my mouth, my eyes and my ears to the entire Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in All just as I am the mouth, the mind, the eyes and the ears of Jesse and he the LIGHT’s. In doing so you will become my mind, Paul’s mind then, Jesse’s mind, Christ’s

Mind then. No matter what I say, no matter what I do you will carry it and give it away. This is your sacrifice, a living sacrifice to the Spirit, to its ways and to its thoughts, so that they will become your ways and your thoughts and The Ways and thoughts of the multitudes.

You are not True Christian Spirituals. But we are going to give you a very precious gift – we are declaring you Now True Christian Spiritualists and with this gift, of course, comes the Fully Activated Mind of Christ – it’s yours, you of The 13. Now all you have to do is accept and convince yourselves of the very Truth of this – you can do it – you have the Powers to do it – only you can do it so do it! Being, you see, always follows Doing. And here is what you must do in conjunction with your becoming a True Christian Spiritual. You must cultivate a Strong and Loving individualism tied to a Fierce Collectivism of each other’s Well-Being at All Times and in any and all circumstances for this is the Foundation Square of the Vesturing of The 13 and must be fully practiced by The 13 so that it may flow out and engulf everyone in its path, in its Love, in its Courage, in its Freedom, in its Truthfulness, in its Unity, in its Practice and Accomplishments, as well as in its Rewards. To do Good Works is not enough for “The 13” – The 13 must always Do Better things than others do. I can assure you that the Seated 13 will.

You see, you really do not know who you are, but I, Paul knows, and if you stay on here and take a seat here, you are going to know all I know and more! This is no Dream - This is Truth and Reality and Fact all tied up in one neat little package, gift wrapped and awaiting your delight in its unwrapping. It's not a dream, then, but the unfolding of the Collective dream of All of Mankind, everywhere.

Now, I am a Prophet and as a prophet I say to you who stay here that you will be going on a trip - here, there and everywhere. End of Prophecy but not the end of the Prophet.

Now, I am a Teacher and as a teacher I say to you who stay here that you will be taught all there is to know here, there and everywhere. End of This teaching but not the end of the Teacher.

We shall continue on Dreams when you have digested all that is herein.

Love and Peace

I, Paul. S.G.

## **Lesson #3: The Rooms where Dreams Occur – II**

Greetings to you my dear sisters, brothers, and Partners, you of The 13.

Question. When do you become aware of a sleep dream? Most of you will probably say “When I wake up” or “when the dream or nightmare wakes me up” or maybe you will answer with “that’s a silly question.” Let’s examine this and see whether or not it is silly.

Nightmares or what I cite as sleep insanity are products of fear, guilt, doubts, and self-hatred – all matters causing, in medical terms, nervous disorders. It is also claimed medically that nightmares are closely linked to biological factors. This would be true if the brain constituted the totality of our minds but since it does not the claim is not totally valid. I say “not totally valid” because the human brain is a factor in nightmares and dreams simply because it is the storehouse or warehouse of the subconscious. You see, everything, every single thing you have ever thought from the day you were born is stored permanently in the human computer, the brain. The mind is the Master Craftsman, the Brain is his tool box, which he either keeps orderly or in a chaotic mess and this Order, or lack of it, determines how successful the Craftsman really is, in both the Awake and the sleep states, in the Trance

States and in the Out of Body states.

How many times have you had a late-night snack and then had a nightmare? I ask this question only because medical science cites this “snacking” as a cause of nightmares. On the other hand, though, how many times have you had a nightmare when you did not have a late-night snack? The Mind, conscious always, is not affected biologically. The mind never sleeps, never rests. The brain rests or does something we call “sleep.” This raises another question, what is sleep? We will go into this later. Right now, I need to go back to that statement above which reads: “The Mind, conscious always, is not affected biologically.” If you have read the Message of I Paul, would you not think this to be a contradiction? I would if I didn’t fully understand The Message!

There is but ONE MIND but a multiplicity of minds – essences, then, of this ONE MIND. MIND and minds are Eternal. There is a physical body and there is a spiritual “Body” and they both hold an essence of the ONE MIND. The physical body has a brain – spirit has no brain. The physical body rests and that means that the brain rests – we call it sleep, but we should call it Trance for that is exactly what it is in human beings. What I am saying here, then, is that humans don’t sleep, they trance, animals

don't trance, they sleep – the difference is a simple matter of The Mind.

Everything I am saying herein is highly contradictive to what the Sciences claim and an outright condemnation of Darwinism. In this sense Spiritualism is not only anti-religion but anti-science insofar as the human brain and the human (lower) mind are concerned. Science states they are one and the same thing. Spiritualism states they are entirely separate entities – one live and dies – the other simply lives or exists eternally.

Life is a spirit inhabiting a perishable body, i.e., Human Life, the only form of physical life with a mind as well as a brain. Human Life on this Earth W-303 is the only physical life with provable psychical qualities and attributes and definitive minds.

What we collectively call Man here on West-303 is, without any contradiction, an animal. All animals die. Our religious brothers and sisters say “not to worry,” sooner or later you will be resurrected, not all the animals, mind you, just the human animals. Science says, be fit and survive for as long as you can, for when you die you are dead dead. I agree with Science, the ignorant religionists don't know what they are talking about, they don't know anything about what they think they know – they are dreamers but

they dream along the lines of self-imposed insanity for they have given their minds over to reprobate minds – they have been had. And Science has been had also by its very own self-imposed insanity, the by-product of opposing Everything religion claims is true.

As death is known as the Grim Reaper, Dreams are known to a True Spiritual as the Great Repairer. It doesn't take the dream hardly any time at all to repair something but most often it takes the unaware dreamer a vast amount of time to recall, to recognize, to remember and to institute, if ever, the repair to the satisfaction of oneself and "other."

Now if sleep is a Trance State, where is the mind during this Trance State? Since it doesn't sleep or "rest" or lose Consciousness for less than a split-second, and only this on one particular occasion, where is it and what is it doing? Is it just "hanging around" waiting for its buddy, the brain, to wake up? I don't think so. Would you believe me if I tell you that what it is doing is enjoying its Freedom? Well, whether you do or not, that's exactly what it is doing – enjoying its Freedom from the Physical Body, which, in all of its physical totality, is lying in a trance state. From this you should be capable of discerning that Freedom is "rest" to the Mind. And, pray tell, what does

the Message of I Paul say about Freedom? I think now you will find out. Effort in Action is still the name of the Game around here.

I want you to know that I am struggling here to make some kind of sense out of these gray areas for your benefit. If I could give it to you clearer I would but in attempting to explain something esoteric or arcane or something given to me through symbols in low level terms, something is always missing or told in allegoric terms, so bear with me.

Have you ever been aware that you were “dreaming”? If yes, ask yourself “How did I know”? What was it that made this knowledge, this perception available to you? Your brain? Not if it’s asleep! In a Trance then. The Message of I Paul tells the World, especially its Scientists, not to study Man but to concentrate on the Study of Mind. You see, I can follow and understand the Theory of Evolution and the argument that man as we know him derived from matter. But how can we derive the Mind out of mere matter? The problem of the origin of the Mind is the real curse of the Theory of Evolution. Consciousness did not evolve biologically via simple natural selection. I ask you, could this Consciousness, this enormous influence of ideas, principles, beliefs over our lives and actions, really be derivable from animal behavior? Alone of species

on This Earth, All alone! We try to understand ourselves and the world. We become rebels or patriots or martyrs on the basis of ideas. We erect great cities, build pyramids and computers. We write poems and solve equations; we play chess and we sing. We sail ships around the world and to other planets and we listen in to other galaxies – what have these to do with rats in mazes or the threat displays of baboons? The continuity hypothesis of Darwin for the evolution of mind is a very foolish totem of evolutionary mythology. The yearning for certainty that drives the scientist, the aching beauty which harasses the artist, the sweet thorn of justice which fires the rebel from the eases of life, or the thrill of exultation which we hear of true acts of that now difficult virtue of courage, of cheerful endurance of hopeless suffering – are these really derivable from matter? Or even continuous with the idiot hierarchies of speechless apes? I think not.

The chasm is awesome. The emotional lives of men and women and of mammals are in many ways similar. But to focus upon the similarity unduly is to forget that such a chasm exists at all. The human physical body its wholeness of flesh, blood, tissues, muscle, its organs and glands, its brain and its central nervous system, its teeth and its toenails are matter but the Mind is metaphysical – no beginning and no end – Mind, you see, is uncreated and

uncreatable, and this is where Science and Religion and Darwin all made their mistakes and continue to wallow in them.

Now getting back to the question that helped trigger that discourse on Evolution of the Species let us go on. “Have you ever been aware that you were “dreaming”? If so, how did you know? Who or what told you? The body? The brain? The sub-conscious? The Consciousness? The Unconsciousness? The Conscience? The Consciousness of consciousness? Who? What? Why? How? Before you try to answer all those queries keep firmly in your thoughts that these “things” we call minds are not organs, not visible; Essences, then; Spirits, then; the Seat of Consciousness then, from LIFE to LIGHT, to Lights, to Shadows, then, and Never Alone, never, never alone!

Now, what I want to know from you is how did you know you were dreaming while you were dreaming in what we call the sleep state? Did you awaken from the dream or did you “Awaken” in the dream? And if in the dream, who or what “awakened”?

Allow me to wander, to drift about some and toss some bits and pieces of my cogitations at you so that you can utilize your Creative Thought and Creative Imaginations to see what you can see. If the Mind is always Conscious what

in God's name is the Unconscious? The sub-conscious? The subliminal mind? Let's say that when you deliberately set-out to go into a Trance, the lower mind alerts, so to say, the brain to be ready for what is going to happen – and let's also say that when you are simply going to rest, to sleep then, you do not (your mind does not) inform the brain to prepare itself, to shut down, to cease functioning then. It, your mind, simply allows all of your Physicalness to trance out, shut down or go to sleep as we call it and you go to sleep. You're asleep but you're still alive, you're breathing, your heart is beating, the blood is flowing but you're not dreaming – you're what we call Unconscious. But what is unconscious – your mind? Your brain? What? So, anyway, when all of your physicalness goes into the sleep or trance state your mind remains active, alert, conscious then, but since you're asleep we say that your sub-conscious or your subliminal or, better, your collective unconscious is what is functioning – but – if you are aware that you are “dreaming,” are lucid, then, don't we now have proof that the mind doesn't trance, doesn't sleep? And when the brain is shut down the mind can then control it without resistance or interference from it, the Mind, can leave the body and travel about. Is what you call a dream really the Mind making adjustments on its computer, your brain, which is recording everything in what is called,

rightly or wrongly, the sub-conscious and more correctly ought to be called the memory, always subject to the Powers of Suggestion in either the awake or the sleep or the trance states? And could these recordings, adjustments, guidances and suggestions be your dreams?

When you are dreaming and you know it, that “dream” is, in reality, your mind enjoying its Freedom and you are experiencing an “In Plane” Out of Body Experience both mentally and Spiritually - but the question still remains - What is dreaming and how do you know it?

You think about this while I stop wandering and get some answers.

We, you and me, will get back to this. In the meantime, talk it over among yourselves and cogitate upon it.

Love for Unity and Peace and One Mindedness

Your brother

I, Paul. S.G.

## **Lesson #4: “The Agony of Conscience” What have you done for You lately?**

Greetings to you my dear brothers, sisters and Partners, you of The 13.

The only magic wands I am cognizant of are all of you – other than plain, ordinary people, I know of no others. There is no such magic that will turn you into an instant mystic or Spirit Guide, no magic potion that makes you a Christ Spiritual. Yet everything you Need to be all of these personages is in you and has been there within you since your beginning here.

It’s truly amazing how you treat Yourself, as if You didn’t exist even. How often do you really think about You or even try to be You? How many masks do you really wear and why do you wear them? What advantage do they give you and over whom? Clones don’t use mirrors and illusions shouldn’t wear masks. “Self” is not a mask, “self” is a disease and an illusionary disease and insanity, which, can very easily lead you to the real ones.

Your whole life should be wrapped up in your true-Life and your every thought, word, act, and deed should be Good, Right and True ones. But they aren’t. Why?

With but one exception you stated you liked life. I

believe that when you answered my question, one by one, most of you were talking about your temporal life – the life and its materialism, its matter, that dies, ceases to exist, gone forever, a matter of wasted waste that makes you, and all like you, Prime Candidates for the plane of the Earthbound.

The you in the paragraph above should be understood as your divine consciousness, your essence of The One Mind, the “Fingerprint” of your True-Self, the Lower Mind, then.

Now that’s really all you are here on this Earth. You may be fat or skinny, ugly or beautiful, drunk or sober, ignorant or smart, rich or poor – none of that counts for anything to your True-Self – those are all physical-material matters – matters that really do not matter to Spirit! So why do they matter to you? You are a spirit inhabiting “a body”! Which, then, I ask you, should you be more concerned with, the body or the spirit?

From the very moment you were born, birthed, then, you began dying – and you began this dying so that You could live eternally. What I would like to know is this: What have you done for You lately? Really, now, can you think of anything at all that you have done for Your Well-Being, lately?

The Truth is, my dear sisters and brothers, that you do more for “self” in a day than you do for True-Self in a year!

Would any of you like to dispute that?

Let me tell you what you are up against. Every thought, every word, every act, every deed produced by you is directed at You and they do one of two things – they either enhance Your Well-Being or they destroy a part of Your Well-Being – Period!

You cannot rationalize this Truth nor Intellectualize it.

You see, come hell or high water you are not going to live forever but You are. And that truth, that stark Reality, that Fact, then, ought to be incentive enough for you to renew your mind, change your ways and begin to work hard Now to see and Be in the Light in the Future, and Do Everything possible Now to Avoid the Darkness then!

Oh! you say, I can't do that – I'll have to give-up too many things. Well, that's not so, not True, but even if it were, it would be better for you to give them up NOW than to have them all taken away from you, or more correctly, have you taken away from them, and lose everything in the process, even the Light!

Do you recall the encounter between the rich young Prince and Jesus? What would you do in that very situation

if you were the Prince? Would you follow Jesus, really? Or would you continue to conform to this world and its materialism and mammon and continue to follow “self?”

You’ve got your Priorities all mixed up – you need to unscramble them and place your house in Order and place LIFE-LIGHT-and spirit Above all things and your “self” below All Things, out of sight, buried, gone, forgotten! And when you do that you can humbly place yourself last on your list of Priorities and You at the Helm of the Good Ship, Right and True!

You see, we have been telling anyone, and everyone, who would listen, that you simply cannot be Fully Human unless you act like you are, and you cannot be Fully Spiritual until you act like you are. We call that Acting Natural and “to “Act Natural” is to be your True-Self within a duality of minds that Need be United in order that the spirit, You then, may Evolve.” This does not mean that you have to be dead for You to Evolve – just as you started dying the day you were born, so too, did the spirit, the Real You start to Live! Living, then, is evolution to the spirit.

If You want to stay out of the darkness, then you and You need to reprogram your computer and when done you need to follow the New diligently in every New Now! That’s what “renewing” really means. That’s what Change and

Changing is all about.

What you need to do is to let your minds run your life not your brain, not your senses, not your central nervous system. Let them run your physical body and instead of being so unnaturally conscious of it and its wants and its carnal appetites, you begin to become Conscious of Consciousness, of your Intuitions, your Instincts, your Conscience, and let your Minds do for you instead of allowing your physical-material existence dictate what you will do, when it says you will do it! It's not going anywhere - You are! The only question is where?

And that my dear sisters and brothers is a very, very simple Matter of Minds - the One Matter that really Matters if you have the Light in your eye.

With much love and Freedom

our brother

I, Paul. S.G.

## **Lesson #5: The Rooms Where Dreams Occur – III**

Greetings to you my dear brothers, sisters, and Partners, you of The 13.

Question time. How do we dream? Why do we dream? Can we refuse to dream? Can we control our dreams? Can we control ourselves, our actions in our dreams? Can I invade your dreams? Is there telepathic power in dreams and can we learn to use it if it exists? What is a dream?

Addressing the last question, it is pretty solidly accepted by the scientists, psychologists, and researchers on the subject that a dream is an altered state of consciousness and if that be true then what is called a “lucid dream” would have to be described as an altered state in an altered state of Consciousness. Regardless of what the varied Sciences involved in dream research call them I know “dreams” to be a path to much illumination and a mystical union and I also know how not to dream if I have no desire or need to dream. I must also tell you that it was in a “dream” that I first encountered my True-Self and I knew, was fully aware, and awake, in my sleep, then, and I knew it was me. It may sound crazy but I assure you it is so and I recognize the need to say it better and I will, sooner or later because I know I must.

It was an exciting but a very eerie, at first, encounter. I had to ask myself if I was asleep or in a Trance and when I realized that I was “asleep” but “awake,” conscious then, in my dream or “our” dream and yet still sleeping in my bed it dawned on me that I was staring at me, my true-self who looked exactly like me and when I thought of that I knew conclusively I was asleep and experiencing a very lucid dream because I knew that if I was awake, not sleeping then, I could not possibly see my True-Self, my Spirit, or actually, the Real Me. It wasn't a case of the Real Me looking at an illusion – it was a case of the illusion seeing the Real Thing! As you probably have figured out by now Dreams are a very confusing delicate and intricate subject. Yet it is one subject we need to teach and teach until you Understand and can Practice all the machinery of the Dream or Trance States. And first we study Mind.

In order for me to be a truly effective teacher on the subject of Dreams I need your full cooperation. I need for all of you to totally eliminate from your minds any and all thoughts, ideas, imaginings, beliefs and so forth that you have about dreams and about the significance of dreams except those things you have read and gleaned from the Message of I Paul and those things given to you in what we will Now and in the Future call “The Book of the 13” i.e., the Message in its entirety that is given only to The 13 and

to no one else. Therefore, Everything that pertains to the Family is in force here in the Order of 13 insofar as the Message of I Paul is concerned, but, everything that constitutes “The Book of the 13” does not apply in any way, shape, form or force to the Family members who try to live and act according to the Directives and Principles and Guidances given in the Message of I Paul.

Now let’s get back to our Dreams. What do we mean by the Sub-Conscious? Webster says: “Occurring with little or no conscious perception on the part of the individual: said of mental processes and reactions. Not fully conscious.” What do we mean by the sub-liminal? Webster says: [threshold + AL] “below the threshold of consciousness; specifically, involving stimuli intended to take effect subconsciously through repetition.”

What do we mean by Conscious? Webster says: “having a feeling or knowledge (with of or that); aware; cognizant – able to feel and think; in the normal waking state – aware of oneself as a thinking being – same as self-conscious – intentional (conscious humor) – known to or felt by oneself (conscious guilt).”

What do we mean by Consciousness? Webster says: “The state of being conscious – awareness of one’s own feelings, what is happening around one, etc. – the totality

of one's thoughts, feelings, and impressions – Conscious Mind.”

What do we mean by Conscience? Webster says: “[to know] a knowledge of right or wrong, a sense of right or wrong, with a compulsion to do right – moral judgment that keeps one from violating one's ethical principles.”

Now what do I say that the above mean? Perpetual thought, Thinking. The Perpetual Activity of the Lower Mind expressing itself at all levels of its Consciousness which it freely and unhinderedly chooses whenever the Wholeness of Its Whole is United and operating as ONE i.e. the body, the mind, and the spirit, sans “self” – that's what the Mind means to me, my mind, that is. Which, of course, if you have studied the Message of I Paul is not my mind at All.

Now as we progress through this study of Mind and Dream keep somewhere in your Mind the statement from the Message of I Paul that says, “I sleep when I don't sleep.”

Now what do we mean by unconscious? Webster says, “deprived of consciousness (unconscious from a blow on the head) – not aware (of)” – “the Unconscious” – psycho-analysis, the sum of all memories, thoughts, feelings etc. of which the individual is not conscious but which

influence his emotions and his behavior. “The Unconscious” is often also called The “Collective Unconscious” in some circles.

Let me now put all of the above into an allegoric statement: The True Consciousness stays on Top of the mountain and only its Essences trickle down. The lower down the mountain the water trickles the deeper the Consciousness becomes. At the top of the mountain, it's Omnipresent, Omniscient and Omnipotent and when it reaches its lowest level and levels off the Top of the Pool is Conscious and at its very deepness it is dark and collectively unaware of its true depth but at the same moment sensing its possible height.”

You see, Consciousness is Consciousness is Consciousness, Mind Wise, and Spirit Wise. But we of the undeveloped Mind, the under worked Mind, the altered Mind, the separated Mind, view Consciousness in stages or levels to compensate for and explain and excuse our own inadequacy of attaining to and retaining Full Consciousness. Hence Consciousness, man wise, is Conscious, subconscious, Unconscious, Dead!

You cannot enter into an unconscious union with God. You cannot enter into a subconscious union with God. You cannot enter into a subliminal union with God. You can

only enter into a Conscious Union with God. The Truth is You are never Unconscious, never Subconscious, never, then, anything but Conscious! On the other hand, though you are not Fully Conscious but you hold all the gifts, all the attributes, all the qualities to be so but since you are not, we say, and wrongly so, such things as subconscious and unconscious. Not even when you are dead.

The problem is that you have not abandoned and surrendered your Wholeness to the Soul, to the Spirit of Perpetual and Eternal Consciousness. In other words, you are aware of your own divinity but you really have not accepted the truth of it nor have you instituted the effort of thought and effort of action to declare and make it manifest and visible for all to see and hear.

Who controls your mind? “Self”? People? Places? Things? You do not and You should.

With You in control of all of your faculties the possibilities and the Absolutes are Staggering, Awesome, Visible and Transcendable! Divine Consciousness is transcendable Consciousness! Why, therefore do you not transcend? Why do you continue to dream? Why do you not Act and cease dreaming and Do it? You can do it! What are you waiting for? What are you afraid of? What motivates you to dampen, dull, kill, even, your motivation to Do the

Good, the Right, and the True Automatically?  
Unhesitatingly? Uncompromisingly? Rationalization –  
Intellectualization, and Paranoia, that's what! And that's  
ignorance and an abuse of your minds both Physically and  
Spiritually. That's not Acting Natural it's clearly acting  
quite unnaturally!

If “The 13” is the Light of the World, and they are,  
then they are also the Light of the New Worlds and they  
will be “IF” they turn on the Light and disperse the  
Darkness, beginning with their very own darkness. And  
there exists two very excellent Ways for them to do so –  
Meditation and Dream (from the Book of the Two Ways)  
the Gateways of the Straight Way to Unity and  
Transcendence.

Since we covered meditation rather intensely but still  
have a few more words on it, here we will stay with the  
Dream and the Mind for now.

Since we have established that we are always  
conscious, our minds are always conscious, then, Aware,  
then, we need to turn to a superconsciousness rather than  
a subconsciousness or an unconsciousness to overcome,  
repair, then, our distorted–altered mind. Even though our  
mind is always conscious, always aware does not  
necessarily mean that our physicalness is always conscious

and always aware! In truth it isn't. It was not created to be so and it cannot be altered to become so. Even though it was Perfectly Created it was not Created Perfect. Our Perfection lies elsewhere, not here, in our physical body or, better, in and of our physicalness – all matter, mere matter, which, with its demise, never matters, never, never again matters.

If “I” am separated from God, what is it that is Separated? My physical-material being? No, it was never with God, never will be with God. My spirit? No, it is with God. My Mind, then? Yes, my mind, my Consciousness is what is Separated from God. It was sent Out to be Called Back. So, it wasn't always so and it will not always be so. My Mind, my Consciousness, then, is not really mine even though it is my most important quality – my most cherished Attribute – my divinity – my way in and my way out. It's the Link between my physical-material temporal existence and my spirit-Spiritual Eternal Existence and the Key to my vesturing, my Involution and my Evolution, A Perfecting Evolution, then.

The study of mind then informs me that I must improve my mind here by making the True-Self's Senses my senses while in the flesh and by doing so and becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual while here on W-303 in

the flesh I guarantee myself Now a place in The Light then!

And if Fully Human and Fully Spiritual here and Now I can enter any and all of the Rooms where dreams occur if I so desire. The choice then is always mine.

The Rooms Where Dreams Occur, The Four Houses are, as you know, are Mental - Emotional - Physical - Spiritual.

You have also been given the Rooms within the Spiritual House. I see no need to repeat them here.

The Rooms in the Physical House are: Well-Being - Business - Barriers - Health - Personal-Problem Solutions - Decision Making - common sense.

The Rooms in the Emotional House are: Fearlessness - Courage - Self-Esteem - Positiveness - Happiness - Joy - Addictions - Falsehoods - Voices - Gossip - Jealousy - Greed - False Pride - Vanity - wild and inane imaginings - Yearnings - Wants - Hate - Anger - Tempers - Reassurance - Protection.

The Rooms in the Mental House are: Recognition - Remembering - Creativity - Channel for Higher Mind - Channel for Spirit - Lucid Dreams - Ideals - Goal - Tasks - Wisdom - Knowledge - Understanding - Intelligence - Love - Common Sense - Unity - Peace - Faith - Hope - and

All the Other Mentations within the Message of I Paul.

Our Lesson #7 will be on “Lucid Dreaming” and #6 will be on “Mind” and “Rooms” and Dreams.

Now in closing Lesson Number Five I have one more very important point of Reality to spell out for you.

Regardless of how great your mind, your consciousness is and has developed, without your brain and its proper functioning and well-being, your Consciousness would be unusable for your Physical Well-Being and when we say “brain” we include the central nervous system of the Physical Body. Get it? Good!

Much Love for All of You and your Well-Being  
and One-Mindedness as an Order.

Your brother,

I, Paul. S.G.

## **Lesson #6: Eternity Never Stops Waiting**

Greetings to you my dear sisters, brothers, and Partners, you of The 13.

Every realistic seeker of Truth needs be a sober, sound, Rational Thinker. What has satisfied others in the past may not satisfy the Thinker in the Now who demands greater evidence than mere belief and blind faith, the products of preconceived ideas, and therefore not necessarily based on evidence and things provable and, more importantly, things useful.

An honest, earnest, and sincere Seeker of the Truth must summon his own consciousness as a witness, appealing to his own rational and spiritual nature and must allow the conscience to be one's guide when in doubt of the Way to be taken at any given moment of uncertainty.

Such seekers of the Truth must then, out of a necessity to succeed, hold steadfast to a well-ordered and self-disciplined program or way to follow in their quest. And This Way needs be reasonable, workable, probable, beneficial, and satisfactory to one's needs and Well-Being as well as for the Well-Being of all those whose paths they cross.

It can hardly be disputed that almost everyone's

thoughts and Acts are controlled more out of what one wants out of life than out of what one Needs to put into life in order to satisfy their quest and their Whole Well-Being as the end result of and Final Goal of the quest itself. Any approach towards the Truth from a position of selfish and materialistic wants and involving matters that do not matter is doomed before its actual inception. The Highest Truth is Spirit and therefore any seeking after it necessitates a more spiritualized approach than most people are willing to concede and offer.

While we mortals often falter, fall and even fail; the Spirit, the divine always succeeds, not in an hour, perhaps, not in a day, a week, or a year, but eventually. Patience, you see, is a spiritual quality that we mortals acquire over an extended period of time and without which I would not have been able to persevere on the Receiving end of the Message of I Paul for more than a decade now. So, when you fail to reap “instant” results think on this and be patient.

Now the Message states that we ought to study mind over man. I am not too sure how many of you understand that statement or how many of you would even know how to study mind or where to begin even.

As the Message says we don't even know what we

think we know and, somehow, that ties directly into the Study of the Mind in lieu of the Study of Man. The Question, then, is how? And before we tackle the question, we need point out a problem, a paradox which raises another question: Can we only study the Human Mind with the Human Mind? If so, we are in trouble. We know that the Human Mind is the “Lower” mind, the “Fallen” mind even, which is in an altered state of Consciousness! Inadequate, then, for such a study!

Now let’s go back to the question of “how”? It cannot be by accident that the first sentence of the Message of I Paul is about Consciousness and Soul and Spirit: The Soul or the Spirit of Consciousness comes from (IS) God – That’s how it should be interpreted.

In light of this it is obvious that Consciousness has absolutely no link with any evolutionary theory of Man whatsoever – Consciousness is Spirit, the Supreme Spirit, God, LIFE, then, the One Soul, then, and All other Consciousnesses coming from “The Spirit” is but an Essence of the One Consciousness and therefore a Metaphysical Endowment and not a matter of mere matter as the Human and Animal Brain is – as the Human and Animal Body are.

The Human Mind or the Consciousness of Man being

an essence of the ONE Mind or Consciousness is not equal to the One Mind or Highest Mind and therefore is a Lower Mind as well as an altered mind being less than the Highest Mind, inferior to the Highest Mind and a mind easily distorted, in fact is distorted in comparison to the Omniscient Perfection of its source. (When I struggle, I struggle.)

So, The Mind or the Consciousness of Man-Woman when operating and functioning properly guides the controllable course of events of one's life through the brain and the central nervous system and has causal efficacy in bodily behavior (unless you have already, collectively, body, brain, mind then, sold out completely your already altered and distorted mind to another or other less altered and less distorted mind, body, and brain than your own).

Now let me pose a question to you, The 13: Is it possible to think, talk, walk, and record data for some possible future use via recall and not be conscious of any of it? I want you all to very, very carefully think this out – all the way out before you even attempt to give me an answer.

Going on, I need to ask you another question. Where is your mind and where does consciousness take place? You probably will answer this by saying in your head. That's what almost everyone will say. The reason being is that

when we introspect, we seem to look somewhere into our head, somewhere behind our eyes, an inner looking, sort of, for that is what introspect is, “looking.” But, then, what do we mean by look or looking? At times we close our eyes to introspect better, or at least we think we can introspect more clearly. Upon what? Its spatial character, location, seems unquestionable. Moreover, we seem to move, or at least “look” in other directions. And if we press ourselves too strongly to further characterize this location or space (apart from its imagined contents), we feel a vague irritation, as if there was something that did not want to be known, some quality which to question was somehow ungrateful, like rudeness in a friendly place.

We not only locate this space of Consciousness in our heads, but we also assume it is there in others also.

When we are talking face to face with someone, we assume we are talking to that space behind their eyes, that same space we believe we are talking from.

And this is the very core of the matter. There is nothing inside our heads, yours or mine, except physiological tissue of one sort or another, pink or grayish, and the fact that it is mostly neurological tissue is not relevant to our question.

If the Human Brain was our mind, if the brain

constituted the Whole of Our Consciousness, then we would all be nothing more and nothing less than “conscious automata” which, happily, we are not, and the brain is not our mind, our Consciousness, yet it is essential to the functioning of our mind or our Consciousness. The Lower Mind or Consciousness cannot by itself perform or carry out its own thoughts, ideas and so forth – it cannot perform a physical act – it cannot do the actual thing I am doing right now. My mind can think it and it can instruct me to write on this paper but it cannot write on this paper with this pen I hold in my hand. My mind is not matter, but it is the essence which makes my human physical-material existence what it is – it is my most important quality insofar as my physical-material existence is concerned. It is my divine nature and it is my eternity, my eternal continuity in a new and glorious “body.” It existed before, it exists with me, and it will exist after me.

The timing of our mind is very interesting also. When we are awake are we conscious all the time? When we are asleep are we conscious all the time?

Obviously, these are very “loaded” questions. The obvious answer would appear to be that one “has to be conscious to be conscious” and would be a true statement if our brain was the sole seat of our Consciousness, was our

Mind, then, but it is not. The human brain, the animal brain, the brain of the beast, manifests, gives action, activity and reactivity to the mind's thoughts, ideas, images, memories, interior dialogues, regrets, wishes, resolves, all interweaving with the constantly changing pageant of interior and exterior sensations of which I am selectively aware.

The human brain cannot leave the body but the Lower Mind can and does and in the majority of all human beings on W-303 it is “out” of the body more than it is “in” the body and that's really why this world of ours is in such a mess. When the computer is in charge instead of the mind being in charge, you are in very serious trouble! You are deeply in “self” then, and far, far, removed from True-Self, then.

What is the solution to this dilemma? Don't sleep! In this situation, in this very delicate situation whereby you are living, existing, then, on memory and on Habit, automatically, so to say, simply sleep when you don't sleep and The Mind will present itself.

Fake it until you make it. The Power of suggestion is awesome and the memory and Habits of the human brain are endless and you are Never Alone, never, never alone – whether in the body or out of the body it matters not, you

are Never Alone and that's the One Matter that Matters!

Of course, you can prevent all of this by Simply Slaying  
“Self.”

I will see you, all of you, in your dreams, in one of the  
Rooms of your dreams, when and if you begin to get  
seriously concerned and involved in and with the Truth.

We shall continue on this study of Mind and Dream in  
Lesson Number Seven.

Peace and Love

Your Brother

I, Paul

## **Lesson #7: A Live Teaching – Lucid Dreams – I**

Greetings to you my dear brothers, sisters, and Partners, you of The 13.

A True Seeker of Truth is always a tireless and thirsty Seeker Always and in All Ways in Need of Water.

The Lower or Carnal Mind grows and expands its frontiers by fruitful use and gradually sheds its Carnality as it increases its Activity and Reactivity – Action, then, and Continuous Action, then, in the Awake States, in the Asleep State, and in the Dream States or Trance State Levels.

A True Seeker of Truth knows that inappropriate thoughts dull the Mind and that Self-Doubt is the most dulling and debilitating thought of All.

Learning, then, like Love, ought to be a sheer pleasure, yet vast numbers of Human Beings treat learning as something of a bore.

This Earth doesn't suffer from the few geniuses it has – it suffers simply because there are so few of them. We intend to add to the few, 13 more.

Know now that the Eye and the Mind and the Ear are the explorers and the discoverers and the seekers of new frontiers – it is the heart that lingers in the past with the

old, the tried, the tired, but it is Always and in All Ways available in a good person to follow the Way of the Mind, that Entity that is Always and in All Ways Present and Fully Understanding that all barriers are challenges and all difficulties are opportunities. The 13 will accept all the challenges and face all the difficulties and they will be Conquerors and Reapers of the Abundances of Life. You see, to truly enjoy Life one must be continually and mentally and Spiritually Stimulated.

The 13, seriously, Needs to become Conscious about Consciousness and its Eternal Perpetuality. Therefore, you Need to Understand that such terms, used by me, as subconscious, subliminal and unconscious, are analogies, strictly analogies. When you forget something, when you fail to Remember to Remember or Recognize to Recognize you are in a very low state of Consciousness, of low Awareness, then, and this can be cited for example as being subconscious, subliminally weak, or unconscious to that forgotten, whether forgotten temporarily or permanently.

The Message of I Paul, the Book of Life, the Book of the Two Ways all deal with a Way of Life – A Better Way of Life. These are then Collectively a “Book” about and for Human and Spirit Consciousnesses, Minds, then, and their Well-Being.

This “Book” and “The Book of The 13,” then, properly fall into the category of ESP – Parapsychology – Metaphysics – Consciousness Studies – Mysticism – Esotericism – Psychic Phenomenon – Physical-Psychical Law – Arcanumism – and Psychical Sciences and “True Christ Spiritualism”!

To you I say always search for the Good in Things and “Think”! Perhaps something that is evil is, in the deepest sense, some thing that wants your love.

I want you to know that The 13 who will be seated in The Order of 13 will be seated simply because they hold unknown promises within and as a collective they hold a Promise of some Greatness for Light and Thinking Life. My task is to nurture those promises and bring that Promise out of the Shadows and into the Light.

We Spirit Guides live and die by the things we create and destroy and we always live by the Love and Truth of things and not by Morals or Ethics and we are never inquisitive about tomorrow, only the Now, for they are sufficient in, and for, all things regardless of what their nature be.

I’ll warn you now that if you put your Mind in a cage you will put your Spirit Guide in a Rage, so don’t provoke me. I expect all of you to take-up the great two-edged

Sword of The Truth and slay “self” and bury it and then totally forget it and forget where you buried it.

Furthermore, I want you to pay attention to your instincts and to learn how to deal with them. I want you to keep a record of them and what you did about and with them. I also want you to very seriously and carefully apply common sense in regards to them, whether you should pursue them or leave them alone, treating each instinct according to what your common-sense dictates to you. We will review your records periodically as well as your Dream Records, all for a very good purpose of which you will become aware – hopefully today.

As your Spirit Guide and Teacher I will expect your Respect as such and I will see your Respect for each other or I will not see you as one of The 13. The ideal mentality for The Order of Thirteen is, and will be, one where there is no male and no female – just spirit minded people. You will strive diligently to Act Naturally at all Times, then, forsaking the vessel for the spirit. As a 13 you are Responsible for All of your Responsibilities and Come hell or high water you will expediently fulfill them and never make any excuses to The Order of Thirteen or any of its members nor to me, and if I catch you in attempting to Rationalize or Intellectualize away any of them you are

gone from The Order. Goodbye!

At 13 Meetings vulgarity would best be absent. Courtesy will be welcomed at all times. Attentiveness and Presence are demanded.

I teach you learn. When I am speaking you will not. You will abuse no one. You may debate, never argue. Be prepared, for I will do whatever I choose to do, when I choose to do it and no matter what I do you had better not let me see me controlling your Mind. If you cannot discipline yourself and maintain control over your own Mind then you can never be Free and if not Free and in Control of your Mind you cannot be a 13. Yet you need to follow my teaching and I warn you I will always be trying to lose you. Furthermore, regardless of what is in your Mind now, it won't be there in the New Now, when and if you are seated! I am not overly concerned how swiftly you Change and are Changed just as long as I can see Change taking place. As you increase, I will decrease and when you become what I am, spirit-wise, I'll be most happy and satisfied to let you go and Do!

Remember and Recognize this well – Nobody here is up for grabs – only the seats are. When we meet again be Ready!

Now All of the Above has been said for the sake of

Lucidity – Yours. Now let's get on with what we shall know here as Lucid Dreams.

A Lucid Dream is an Altered State within an Altered State of Consciousness. A Lucid Dream is a Subjective Experience, and like most subjective experiences, they cannot be fully communicated in our language clearly. Just as some Symbolism denies interpretation and/or clear discernment so do some Subjective Experiences. So, bear with me for I will strive to give you the very best information and explanations possible.

Lucid means transparent; designating an interval of sanity in a mental disorder; readily understood; Rational.

A Normal dream state is usually experienced in an altered state of consciousness i.e., the brain is not functioning as it would be if you were conscious and not asleep, then. The lucid dream is also an altered state of Consciousness occurring in a normal dream for the same reason, so it would be correct for us to state that a Lucid dream is an altered state of Consciousness within an altered state of consciousness or “An altered state within an altered state.” Many of the qualities of a normal dream such as flying, telepathy, levitation, visitations, symbolizations and so forth are readily found in lucid dreams. In addition, there appears to be a certain set of

qualities and characteristics that are set-apart, unique, then, to the Lucid “Dream.”

In the Lucid State the dreamer is probably experiencing four or more levels of awareness occurring simultaneously and if they are experiencing more than six then it's pretty safe to state that they are experiencing more than a lucid dream – they are most probably experiencing an “in Plane out of body experience” wherein many, many levels of Awareness can be experienced all at once.

Yet, herein we want to stay with Lucid dreams and leave the “Out of Body route through a Lucid dream” for another Lesson. Earlier in this Lesson, I mentioned the difficulty of explaining a “Subjective Experience.” Let me give you an example of a subjective experience. “I am in quite some pain” – This is a subjective experience, wherein it is really only perceptible to me.

Now, in a typical lucid dream, as soon as the dreamer becomes lucid, he “feels” his consciousness rising to the level of lucidity from which vantage point he responds to the normal dream which is still going on. There is now a “definite energy” shift and a continuous “Rise” in Consciousness, awareness, a feeling of “expansion,” a vivid “Awakening,” accompanied by a strong mental

clarity whereby the whole quality of the dream in progress changes markedly at this onset of lucidity and the change is quite noticeable to the dreamer, both within the dream and immediately afterward when the dreamer recalls the dream in the waking state. From this lucid level of awareness, the dreamer will automatically respond to the on-going dream in new and expansive ways, or the dreamer may decide to simply observe the dream scape, but observe with a much greater clarity and intensity than in a normal dream – a clarity approaching that of an Out of body clarity (Two-Minded Clarity simply cannot be bested [in a “One” State, that is].) The Lucid Dreamer may actively decide to “play,” to “participate” in, intervene in the sequence of events in the dream, then, with the elements of the dream, in order to Create a Positive Outcome of the dream and possibly turn it into what you have failed to do in your Meditation attempts – turn the dream into “a Dream,” a Trance, then, a Full Trance State, then, and leave the dream for a more Lucid Place Out of the Body.

Now, knowing this as a possibility, let us concentrate on Lucid dreaming, so that if that’s the route for you, you need to learn and Understand the very mechanics and the Way to obtaining the Lucid dream state.

O.K. we are, you are, now in this Lucid dream we have been writing about herein. You have made your decision to intervene, to Create a Positive outcome out of all of the elements in the dream. The question you must now ask yourself is “Am I going to attempt to Control the dream” or “Am I going to simply control myself and my acts so that they influence the elements, the events, the objects etc. in the dream.” I have found that if you attempt to “take control” completely you find yourself “out of the dream” and awake – wide awake in your bed.

So, you need to make a decision in the dream itself whether or not you are going to attempt to change its outcome. You may, right here, experience a complete surrender of the “self” and if you do you can leave it in the dream by immediately disassociating yourself from it and let “it” fend for itself “in the dream” and you simply walk away from it, lose sight of it, put it “out of the dream” then. Now you know you have absolutely nothing to fear, nothing to worry about, now you can focus all your attention to the dream and start making plans to leave it and “go elsewhere” but you keep this to yourself – you do not make it an element of the dream scape, the dream script going on around you. Since you are now in Full Control of yourself there is no need for you to attempt to Control the dream itself. You know you’re in a dream and it

will end, it won't cost you anything to let it run its course and it cannot harm you – in fact you have gained immensely from it if you have rid yourself of “self” and have left it to roam in dreamland – removed from You. Illusions belong in dreamland anyway.

Getting rid of “self” has tremendous benefits. Can you spell them out?

Let's go on.

Sometimes when the dreamer becomes lucid, the sudden “Rise” in Consciousness, the “Jolt” of it, wakes them up. You should treat this as you would the return back out of the Trance State and attempt to go right back in and Out – this time going for the higher mind! If you do not delay the reentry unduly, your chances of at least landing back in the same dream scape is good. (Don't let that word “chance” disturb you.)

Now, if you weather the “Jolt” from the “Rise” in your Awareness and don't wake up you are right where you want to be. Everything should be becoming clearer and clearer to you and you should be able to discern from the dream scape, the scenario, just what this particular dream is all about and you should be able quickly to discern its Positive side and its Negative side and you should be able to “see” whether it, the dream, is trying to Create something or

Destroy something or both. Is it a dream for your benefit? Is it a dream for someone close to you? Are you supposed to “carry a message” or are you the recipient of one?

One thing about a Lucid dream that you can count on – You would not be in one, ever, if there was not a very, very important Reason for you to be there! Nothing happens by Accident! “Nothing!” There is a Reason for Everything and a Cause!

Now what about the dream scape? What is it – what does it represent? What are the elements in it? The Objects? What do they represent? Who wrote the Script of the dream? And, of course, what does it all mean, what does it signify? Is there an element of Dejà Vu about? And by this query I am not abiding by the dictionary’s meaning nor the Psychologists’. I’m not talking about an illusion – they belong in normal dreams where the “self” belongs, then. I am speaking strictly about a very definite and definitive awareness of a similarity between the dream scape and all that it contains and your Feeling, your sensing that you have been through this before.

Think on this. We will get back to it.

All the questions above deal with you and You and all your problems and all your difficulties as well as all of your Good traits and bad ones and so forth. It’s really a picture

of you – your physical existence – your spirituality – your emotions – your integrity – your veracity – your past and present life – even your future is there – represented by your True-Self.

Therefore, over a period of time, you will Come to Understand that the Lucid Dream is really a Psychic Laboratory, a learning place to make you, not only aware of your inherent Psychic Powers, but the instructions on how to use them and how to get the most out of them for both your Well-Being, but the Well-Being of All in All, as well as, specifically named acquaintances and even, at times, people you know or have heard of by name only.

In the beginning the most difficult chore facing the Lucid dreamer is to identify all the subjects and objects in the dream scenario as to what they represent in that one particular dream; you are sleeping but aware that you are “wide awake” in your sleep. And that is, at first, the most eerie feeling I have ever experienced with the exception of my first couple of times Out of Body and my very first Transcendence.

In this, as to say, Psychic Laboratory you will learn how to tolerate, integrate, experience and channel higher and higher levels of “Awareness” and Spiritual Energies, Wisdom and Powers.

Most of your Lucid Dreams will be Mystical and they will “Peak” with a definite Spiritual and highly esoteric Message designed for The Order of Thirteen as a Collective, as well as, Messages and Guidance for individual enlightenment. These Lucid Dreams with their high levels of Clarity and Spirit Instructions and Teachings are not a permanent replacement for “thought transference” Receivings. They are but temporary substitutes for such Receivings and will cease when you are Capable of Receiving and Sending as well as I do now and can Trance and go out of the Body as I do and have explained to the Family in Communication Number Thirty-Three of the I, Paul series.

Nothing but Nothing, can, for long, take the place of the Knowledge and the Energies and the Powers and, yes, the Secrets, of being capable to Go Out and Come In at will and without any embellishments or assistance from anything or anyone in or outside of your own inherent abilities and God given gifts.

The only requirement, as the Message of I Paul has stated over and over and over again, is that you must slay “self” and Obey and Follow the Mind of Christ. Begin Now and don’t look back.

Now I have told you, at our first meeting, that I do not

make Promises of a Spirit Nature, I simply convey them to you. So, I convey one to you: “The Order of Thirteen, and this means “The Order of Thirteen,” the Official Order, then, in Full Operation will meet one day in the House of Wisdom. This will involve a Going Out and a Coming In with Full Spirit Protection to guide you Safely there and Safely returning you all to your point of origin here on W-303 to carry out the Directives received from Spirit during your stay at the House of Wisdom.” If this Promise is not incentive enough for your full cooperation and Compliance to what is asked, then you do not belong here and, most certainly, you will not survive here nor be seated in The Order of Thirteen. Now just as the Message of I Paul clearly states you have received your Promise and you also have received its accompanying threat. The Sword is two-edged. The Truth does Create and Destroy. The Spirit does, always, keep its Promises – see to it that you keep yours.

Now speaking from experience, I can tell you that All Lucid Dreams and/or All High Trance States are of a specific Spiritual Nature coupled with a specific Physical Nature. Normal dreams occur for various reasons, none of which have any bearing on what I am teaching here. In fact, once you have established proficiency in inducing the High Trance States and/or the phenomena of Dream Lucidity you will find that you no longer will dream

normally nor experience Non-Lucid dreams. Furthermore, once you have Transcended you will not have any use for, nor need of, the Lucid Dream State and they will abruptly end. I do not mean to imply here that you can no longer dream only that having no further use of such a channel you will not have any good reason to further induce them.

I would like to point out here a discovery I made in the Lucid Dream State, the significance of which I am sure you will grasp. Never once, did I encounter anything, not a hint even, of anything religious or of a religious nature in any of my Lucid Dream experiences. They were though all highly Spiritual, high Symbolic and most informative, in what I shall cite as Intensely Esoteric and Visionary. But Absolutely nothing even faintly associated with those things we would label “religious”! If I ever needed any confirmation that I was on the right path to the Kingdom of God, that was it! Spirit wise, it, religion, is non-existent.

If I remember correctly, when I asked at our last meeting, how many of you had experienced the Phenomena of a Lucid Dream, most of you signified in the Affirmative. For the Record I am going to ask each one of you whether you have or not.

Going on, I have a cautionary note to give you from Jesse: “If you can Dream and not make dreams your Master

you can be somebody.”

The Spiritual Nature of these “Lucid Dreams” are highly Mystical and therefore highly Symbolic and often quite vague in their meaning all of which signifies that in such a Dream you must rely on your intuition, and heavily so, to guide your acts and words within them, and when on Awakening, to discern them, but first you must Record them, and this you must do immediately upon your Awakening.

Now in the Untrained, Intuition can be a burden, loaded with errors, weighing heavily upon you. To follow your Intuitions blindly can be dangerous. Since intuition is the direct knowing or learning of something without conscious reasoning, it would, on its surface, appear foolproof. It is not foolproof. The very Nature of Intuition demands that its Followers be trained and Fully Prepared Spiritually, one endowed with Common Sense and Logic and Totally out of “self” the very curse of All Intuition and Instincts. The very Negativity of “self” defeats Positive Intuitions and insidiously turns them into fanciful illusions, images, then, of “itself”! Oh, not all of them, some will get through unscathed, but the problem is - which one? How do you choose? Can you see the danger? Since you already have a distorted mind, an altered

consciousness, and an awareness plagued by “self,” you need be cautious with Intuitions and Instincts.

Now in my opening Remarks – “The 13 – Teaching Session – Allegory Plus” I touched on Logic. I will go over this again here and I will expand upon it for it is Relevant to Instincts and to Intuitions.

“Logic” can be viewed as the Systematic or Systemized Intercommunications between our Brain (Computer) and our Sensortizers (Central Nervous System) which, collectively, comprise our Physical bodies’ activities, functionings, then, via Sendings and Receiving which are tied to our Physical Senses.

At this stage what do we have? What are we?

At this stage, in this state, can we Read? We’re Animals, Beasts, even! No, we cannot Read. With this type of “Logic” such a being cannot seek the Kingdom of God – is not even aware of, nor capable of knowing or seeking God. Why? Is it because in this state we were not created by God? Or by God’s given Power and Wisdom? No, that’s not the Reason – in fact such matters are not even Relevant here – who or what caused them to exist is not important here. And, if not, what is important here? What is relevant here?

Simply put, a matter that truly does matter and, which, is a very simple matter of mind, Consciousness, Awareness, then! Creative Thought and Creative Imagination capabilities that are found in a Wholeness, a Completeness of Soma, Psyche, Pneuma, then. Man-Woman, then, Mankinds, then, not Animals, not beasts, not mammals, then, but Sons and Daughters of the Supreme Spirit, and heirs with LIGHT to the Kingdom of LIFE, then.

Yes, we have all the animal “Logic” of the Senses, the Computer and the Sensortizers, all the Attributes which determine our physicalness and its Functionings and Malfunctions, but we humans alone, on this Earth, have certain Unique, Exclusive, Qualities and Attributes which determine much more than our Animal-like Carnality.

Man-Woman alone are Logical, can Reason correctly, then, on this Earth, and what makes this possible and sets us apart, Unique, then, is what Christ Spiritualism is all about, and, not surprisingly, what Man-Woman are all about. The one simply cannot be lastingly Separated from the Other. The Truth is the Truth and no one but no one can do anything about it, except abide it! “The Way” holds no Negatives. “The Way” is Love and Truth, Grace and Soul, Spirit and spirits, Consciousness and consciousnesses,

Justice and Well-Being, Unity and Peace, Freedom and Righteousness – not a negative to be found.

Yes, the differences between Man-Woman and Animals are Awesome.

You and you of Divine Consciousness are Aware of this but not always, and in All Ways, enamored of, with, and by this Awareness and this lack of Affection and Respect for your own divinity and the divinity of others including, sadly, the Supreme Spirit, LIFE then, and the LIGHT also, is a self-evident Truth. Do you know how this self-evident Truth is manifested by you, and you alone?

If you say no, you probably won't be here very much longer, unless you undergo a very dramatic and a most visible Change. On the other hand, if you say Yes, I do know, Yet do nothing about it, you won't be here very long either! Here, again, we see the eternal Promise or the eternal threat, the Truth, then, that both Creates and Destroys!

You were Created. In fact, Perfectly Created, but not Created Perfect. There is a Reason for this. There is a Purpose behind this. It wasn't an accident. It wasn't by chance. It was deliberate! The Reason is, like our differences from the Animals, Awesome! The Purpose is, like the Reason, also Awesome, but it is more than

Awesome, it is Glorious and Grace-full and Soul-full! It is Everlasting Life in the Light as an integral Partner with the LIGHT in the Happening of the ALL in ALL. And you don't have to shed any blood to participate in this Awesome and Glorious Happening! All you Need Do is change and achieve your Perfection through the stages of Involution, the Now, and Evolution, the Future!

It's a very simple matter of Uniting all the Opposites. And you have the tools and the Way to do this. All you need to do, is DO IT! Only you can DO IT! And since God Almighty is not going to do for you what you are Capable of DOING for yourself don't bother looking at me to do it for you. I can only tell you what must be done and I can teach you various ways and means to get to where you are not but You IS. I can point out the direction in which you should Walk but I cannot Walk for you and since every Journey begins with the First Step and ends with the last, it is up to you and You to take them both.

How long your list of Opposites is, is measured by how much effort you have exerted up to Now and how much you are going to exert from NOW ON. No one here knows better than you what these Opposites are and, contrariwise, Nobody here knows less than you do and, quite probably, more than you do, about some of your Opposites that you

simply deny having, or are blind to.

On the other hand, all of you have and share, communally, many Opposites, “self” being the Primary Opposite and the perpetrator of All the Rest.

So, in the stroke of the pen, we have reduced your lists of Opposites, down to One!

When “self” goes all the Negatives go with it – all the Doubt, all the hate, all the anger, all the dislikes, all the fear, all the foolishness. And you know, all of this is spelled out in the Message, spread all through it like salt and pepper on the Meal before you NOW. It’s the One Meal you can eat and BE what it is you have eaten!

And all of this would be impossible for you without your essences of Consciousness. Your divine Consciousnesses.

Now I ask you – Could all of this have come out of mere matter? Of Course Not. It’s why we are unique. It’s why we are. It’s why we are Christ Spirituals. And it’s why The 13 cannot fail. The tasks will Reveal themselves as rapidly as you reveal yourselves ready. The Goal is Common Knowledge.

Now let us get back to our discourse on Lucid Dreams and the Minds, not that what we have just said had no

connection with them.

All Lucid Dreams unfold from a Spiritual context. All the symbols in such Dreams are of the Light, vehicles for the Light, and the Light itself. Your True-Self is always present in a Lucid Dream and since your physicalness is Asleep, in Trance, you are operating on something other than your physical senses, your brain and your central nervous system, their “logic” is tranced out. The distorted mind is now not distorted simply because the distorters are inactive. The Lower Mind, Conscious Awareness, is now operating with its inherent extra sense impressions and perceptions, Understanding and Knowledge. This “Altered State” of Consciousness is an Upward Alteration from what you have previously accepted as normal and distorted – it’s more a restoration than it is an alteration.

You need to grasp this much the same as you grasp the telling of a story that is passed on, in a circle, and when the story gets back to the Original Teller of same, he doesn’t recognize it as his story. It has undergone a complete, or almost complete, alteration and distortion.

And just as those “stories” get distorted so do your “recall accounts” of a Lucid Dream upon awakening get distorted or altered or forgotten, even. How can you experience a Lucid Dream with all its clarity and then

wake-up and not be able to remember it, or to record a distorted or altered version of it? This “How”? can best be answered by saying that the Principles of Purity, etc., that apply to the High Trance States also apply to the “Lucid Dream” State and it is always best to go to Sleep Prepared for “Anything”!

“Go to Sleep Prepared” – What do we mean by this?

When you retire for the night and go to bed for the purpose of sleep you ought to be fully aware of the following questions and you ought to know all the Answers:

Who are you taking with you?

What are you taking with you?

Why are you taking the above?

How are you taking them?

What’s the purpose?

What’s your Reason?

What’s the Intent?

Where are you taking all this or where do you expect to take it?

It should be obvious here that I am not talking about going to bed with your lover – I did say for the Purpose of Sleep.

If you're taking a lot of “garbage” to bed with you, a lot of Negatives, one even, a lot of anger or of hate or of doubt or fear and so forth, my guess is you aren't going to sleep really good and you probably will have nightmares. As bad as this is, the end results are even worse. We will get to that shortly!

Right Now, Apply all these questions when you go to bed, or wherever, strictly for the Purpose of Trance, Dream, Meditation, Cogitation, with the idea of Lucidity - Clarity at the Levels of OBE or Transcendence!

Now, Prior to going to bed for All of the Purposes listed above you must Prepare Yourself, this means your Whole Being.

O.K. Now you are probably wondering how do I prepare my True-Self?

If you are not wondering about that you are not “listening”!

1. You follow the Purging-Purification exercises, which, for you, are now Rules.

2. Following this you Prepare your Mind by Heightening and Strengthening your Awareness and Attentiveness to what you are about to embark upon.
3. Planting a “given concept” of what it is you are going to do and experience – “I can really do this, I am going to do this – I will do this.”

You see, without your perception of it (or you may Receive notice of it) you have Prepared Yourself – Your Whole Being i.e., soma, psyche, pneuma.

The whole solution to, the “trick” to Prepare, Follow, Come, in this situation, and others, is that you do not take “Anything” to bed with you that you would not take with you “Anywhere” and “Everywhere” here on W-303 and Out of Body, or on a Transcendent Journey, or into the Light of the Kingdom of LIFE! “See”? This taking with you means:

Mentally – Emotionally – Physically – Spiritually.

You see, if you don’t take Negatives to bed with you, you simply cannot get out of bed with them – You don’t have them then – and All you have to do when you get out of bed is avoid them – repel them – deny them – shut them out – and keep them out, and you can do it, once and once

and for All. Try it, you'll like it – it works – but only when you do.

People like you have been saying for ages that there must be a Place to Nurture Creative Hopes and Dreams and watch them Unfold and come true, and there is – we begin in a normal dream or meditation – we graduate to a Lucid Dream or High Trance where our Awareness steadily expands – Rises, then, and when we reach the “Awake” or “Aware” conscious level just below the horizontal-vertical level of consciousness of our True-Self, we clearly “see” that we can, with one more rise in our “Awareness,” unite with our spirit and that is “the Place” people have been seeking – Now, if we follow the steps given in Communication #33, I, Paul, we are on the threshold of a possible Transcendence – but certainly an OBE.

We intend to continue with Lucid Dreams in the next few lessons as well as the Study of Mind.

You will be receiving these as soon as I compile them. If you have questions try to work them out among yourselves and if not, write me, and we'll get back to you.

Since we are spread out – three of you living some 611 miles away it is difficult for us all to get together often. I will be traveling back and forth for a while and meeting with the Ten here and the Three up there in semi-official

meetings for the purposes of enlightenment – working strictly from the Message, as background, and the Letters and Lessons of The 13 as our Primary Concern. I will inform you all when I will begin this “junketing” of mine and let you know the schedules of these “meetings.”

Much love for Unity and Peace

Your brother

I, Paul.

## **Lesson #8: Lucid Dreams - II**

Greetings to my dear sisters, brothers and partners, you of The 13.

In Lesson Seven we touched upon some of the highlights of Lucid Dreams. Here we are going to begin at the beginning of such States of Awareness involved in the Dream or Trance sleep states.

From what we have already taught on this subject none of you should have any doubts about seriously considering the lucid dream as one path available to illumination and wholeness.

The term “Lucid Dream” is one used by Dream Researchers and should also be equally entitled as “Dreams of Knowledge.” They were treated this way by Dr. Jung.

The fact that people from all walks of Life do experience lucid dreams strongly suggests that consciousness is less tethered to the body than most scientists would like to believe. They cringe when lucid dreamers report observing an inner reality which is in no way inferior to that observed in the light of day, and they claim to have intensely meaningful Spiritual and Interpersonal experiences, that are normally out of reach to them.

These “Dreams of Knowledge” are illuminations of how you can, and should, live your life “NOW” as a co-heir with Christ to the Kingdom of God. Knowing this in advance, you should find your discernment of your next Lucid Dream a lot easier.

Now we do not want to give you the impression that Lucid dreaming is common in the sense that they occur all the time. They do not. In fact in most people they are quite rare and especially so in those people who have little or no spiritual leanings or tendencies. Yet, there is also another side that must be taken into account. It is quite possible that many people who become Aware that they are asleep, in a dream, then, in which the Dreamer knows he is Dreaming, often upon waking up chalk up the experience as “Just a dream” or, sort of, a dream within a dream, and, therefore, they pay no attention to the phenomena at all. Perhaps you can “see” now why The Message has, for such a long period of time, insisted upon your recording your dreams immediately upon awakening. There is a reason for everything and when you decide not to comply and go your own way, you are not following the directions exactly as given. And when you fail to reap results, you blame The Message. Without true Self-Discipline, “Self” will always rule the roost! And you will remain, always wishful and disappointed.

You have in your possession now a memo from me on ESP. From my Spiritual discernment it would appear to be a rarity. It is not. What ESP ought to be called is “Eternal Spirit Perception,” an Innate Talent that everybody is born With, for after all we are spirits inhabiting a body and not the other way around.

Are you beginning to grasp the tremendous importance of what we have attempted to teach you up to this point in our disclosures of the “Secrets of the Minds”? In Lesson Seven, “Lucid Dreams - I”? In the lessons on the subject “The Rooms Where Dreams Occur”? In Communication Thirty-Three of the I, Paul series with its sub-title of “A dream unfolds”? Remember, I am only asking if you can Recognize their tremendous importance, not if you fully understand them as yet. Let’s go on.

Since “ESP” is an innate talent, it stands to reason that the differences of manifestation of that talent in Persons is a simple matter of degrees. Just as some people, for example, can type with two fingers thirty words a minute, some others can type in excess of a hundred and fifty words a minute; and so, may the ESP talent of persons be measured by degrees in much the same way.

Using this degree of innate talent as a measure, we can see that, while almost everybody dreams, not everybody

experiences Lucid Dreaming or Out-Of-Body experiences, or they are not aware of them. So “Awareness” which we commonly call Consciousness is the key here and Lucid Dreaming and OBE’s, then, properly fall into the Catchall Category of This Innate Talent we call ESP, a talent that covers much, much more than just Lucid Dreams or OBE’s.

Whether you Recognize it or not, you are all mediums, channelers of spirit, then. This should not surprise any of you, if you simply stop and think for a moment, who, and what, you truly are.

Your problem is that your degree of use of this innate talent is about like the two-fingered typist. If my usage was on a par with yours you wouldn’t be here right now, you wouldn’t be reading this, because it would be non-existent, just as the Family and the Order of 13 would be non-existent.

You may all wish or want to have this talent to the degree that I have it but you cannot have it unless you work for it as I have worked for it by simply following the directions of The Message of I Paul exactly as given and leaving matters that do not matter alone. I waste no time - you waste almost all of your time. These add up to the differences between my degree of “ESP” and yours - Effort and Common Sense and the ability to “Listen”! (See

“Secrets of the Minds” – Consciousness of Consciousness – two).

In most lucid dreams the dreamer experiences a distinct transition point in which he feels his consciousness shift from the normal dream to the lucid state, the beginning then of lucidity. This increase of Awareness sometimes bursts forth violently. At other times it may come about slowly, serenely accompanied by very brilliant colors within the dream scape itself. The former, with its “shock-wave” lucidity often causes the dreamer to awaken and lose the experience. (It is possible though to project oneself back into the identical dream scape with lucidity following a prescribed method.)

The lucid dream state is most often charged by an influx of energy that permeates the dreamer’s mind and increases greatly the dreamer’s insight and judgement. This influx of energy is often accompanied by vivid colors, ecstatic feelings from which the dreamer begins to realize a whole new realm of human and spiritual possibilities. It is these possibilities that we are going to examine and hopefully come to Understand them and then use them for our ever widening spiritual and psychic abilities. As in all our dealings with Energies, of which the Lucid Dream is one, our goal is to increase our levels of Freedom as it

pertains to our Spirituality, the Freer we are Spiritually the Freer we are Physically.

Lucid Dreams are, by definition, an altered state of Reality – a higher state than most lucid dreamers are capable of reaching in any other way. The same rule applies to lucid dreams as apply to meditation – Expect Nothing, be ready for Anything!

The goal of the Trance States is to reach a level where one finds a Complete Clarity of Vision, a clarity not accessible to us in our normal awake states. To see fully is to have courage. To see fully is to have NO Fear. But, as is so evident, when we humans examine our world, we seldom see anything fully in our normal state of Consciousness. Remember the Square, the Cube, the Cross? More often than not, we see as Paul wrote in I Corinthians 13: “We see now through a glass, darkly, but then we shall see face to face.” The key here is what did Paul mean by “then.” Does clear vision and enlightenment come only after death? That’s how the religionists interpret Paul, but we know better. Their interpretation of Paul is contrary to his visions reported in his letters and of course their interpretation disavows his experience on the road to Damascus. No, we can have complete vision Now but we need to get out of our Normal Consciousness to have it. We

do this by Receivings, lucid dreams, OBE's and via Transcendences from the meditative vision route. I also did it via Automatic Writing prior to my perfecting the "thought transference" procedure.

The purpose behind the phenomenon of Lucid Dreaming is the same as that for the Out of the Body phenomenon - to give us the experience, regardless of how fleeting or temporary it may be, of spiritual and psychological mastery. These tastes of mastery and transformation are designed specifically to drive one on to continue the inward journey - Seek ye First the Kingdom of God and All These other Things will be yours. The human problem is that they want the other things first before they Seek the Kingdom. This putting of the kingdom of "self" ahead of the Kingdom of God simply does not work for anybody's Well-Being yet everybody insists on trying.

When your gods are your belly and your purse and the kingdom you seek is of a materialistic nature, you are, in truth, seeking a "Realm of Darkness." The Message makes two very profound statements that are relevant here. It tells us that God is a Jealous God and that God is No Respecter of Persons. Does this imply that we can rule out Persons as the Reason or subject of God's Jealousy? Or does it? Was Paul saying to us that God's Jealousy stemmed

from his overflowing love of us and God's demand of our exclusive loyalty which we do not tender to God, is the very Cause of God's Jealousy? It would appear so, or at least that's the impression I was left with in a Lucid Dream of sometime ago. In that dream I was also reminded of a few sayings, such as: Thou shalt love the lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy mind, with all thy spirit, and thy neighbor as thyself. Also, I heard: Those who worship God must worship in spirit and in truth. I remember asking how do you get in spirit? How do you get in truth? And the answer was revealed, not as a matter of morals or ethics, but a matter of Self-Discipline, of Listening, of Repetitiveness and of Acting Natural at all times. (In "Secrets of the Minds" - II, Consciousness of Consciousness, I cover this whole matter rather extensively.)

In OBE the same message came across in a digested form: Have Order in your life and have one plan to make All Plans from i.e., serve Life and LIFE and LIGHT! That was it.

The point here is that the teleology<sup>1</sup> of both the OBE and the Lucid Dream are for Spirit Guidance and Enlightenment and we must of course include herein the meditative exercise used for seeking answers to a

---

<sup>1</sup> of having an ultimate purpose.

particular problem or question because they all properly belong in the Trance State phenomena.

Fear, in the Physical-Vessel man, is the most primitive of All of his or her emotions, and all humans here on W-303 still have a tremendous amount of Fear stored up within them waiting to erupt at the slightest provocation. Everybody needs to learn how to confront the objects and sources of their fear in order to thrive, prosper and progress in their daily lives. And All True Christ Spirituals need to overcome all Fear in its entirety!

Now you may ask, and I wouldn't blame you for doing so, how is this possible? A former President of this country once said that the only thing we have to fear is fear itself. The Message says if you must have something to fear, fear "self." If we fear fear, we are not free of fear. If we fear only "self" we have no fear actually because "self" is our own pet illusion!

The "bottom line" of all fear is Physical death. When we remove that fear from our consciousness the rest is all downhill.

I no longer fear but at the same time I have a very healthy respect for people and places and things that can do harm to my well-being, but I am not afraid of them, nor do I fear being where they are or when they appear where I

am.

Fear was the very first thing Paul instructed and guided me on – the Need to put it behind me and fear nothing, and this was the objective of my very first OBE, which I took from a Lucid Dream situation.

To be unafraid of fear itself shows a willingness to face any and all of your fears, hidden or otherwise, and is the beginning of putting them behind you where they can no longer overwhelm your consciousness and cause you to lose total control of your own mind.

All True Spiritual and psychological tasks lead a person into a greater overall appreciation of the Light and Dark side of their Being. The Lower or Carnal psyche of human nature is the same in all people of This Earth. Spiritualism, when it is True and Genuine, is “expansive” of Awareness and not “displace-ive” of Awareness. It leads us to “see” the Whole of our Being and does not lead us to reflect upon our higher nature only. True Christ Spiritualism is a way of Life that is Equally balanced between our lower and higher natures. The Goal here is to be Fully Human and Fully Spiritual.

This immediate goal then is the foundation square on which all lucid dreams and all OBE’s are predicated upon. Their message is always one of love, unity, and peace, of

guidance and enlightenment toward your becoming a Fully Human and Fully Spiritual Being in the NOW. This “Fully Being,” then is the highest manifestation of our divine nature Attainable in the flesh, and the Highest Two-Way flow of Recognition possible to us in the Now, as the Book of the Two Ways makes clear to us, as it is given in the contents of The Message of I Paul, in many Lucid Dreams and as the Foundation Stone of All Out of Body Experiences - All inheritances of our own innate eternal spirit perception.

While we need to dwell upon our higher nature in order to grow in a Positive Direction, we cannot ignore our dark and lower nature in the process of this progress, then.

A Whole Person, then, is someone who has walked after the spirit, walked with the spirit, and walked in the spirit with Spirit and has wrestled with “Self” and defeated it. Again, in a nutshell, this is Prepare, Follow, Come, in the Now!

So we have the debilitating effect of Fear in the awake states and in the normal dream states but an Absence of All Fear in the Lucid Dream and Out of Body Experience states. Do you know why? You should, you have the answers in your possession.

You can't walk after the spirit if you're Full of Fear.

You can't walk with the spirit unless you leave Fear behind. And if you cannot do these two things forget about walking in the spirit, you simply cannot do it.

You see, it's easy to say don't fear. Jesus said it over and over again to his acolytes. But it's still a hard thing to do. But if you could only understand what it does to you, what it prevents you from doing and accomplishing, what it costs you in happiness and the real joys in this life, then, maybe then, you will do something about it.

Fear is the symptom of all of your Dis-ease, your lack of faith in yourself, your lack of self-confidence, your lack of love for yourself and others, and the real cause of all your short-comings. Doubt, a product of fear, which is, in turn, a product of "self," is the symptom behind your lack of true desire, true motivation, the cause of All of your procrastinations, the very reason you get stuck-in and stay stuck-in and therefore fail to improve your lot in life, your failure to "know" and to "trust" in the Truth that you have Creative Powers within you just waiting to be called into your service.

Failure is a symptom of your unpreparedness, that which forces you to attempt to do things your own way, even though your way has proved, time after time, that that is not the way - "self," you see, simply won't allow

you to stop trying.

Disorder and a lack of inner peace are the symptoms of all of the above coupled with your “play-acting,” your attempting to mind everybody else’s business and none of your own, lording it over others and all the while knowing that your own lord and master is “self” and its chaos – (this really is being very ignorant) – it’s negativity and eventually your downfall, your demise and your justly reaping the darkness as the victim of your own stupidity. It’s amazing that these Truths cause you no unrest, no fear, and do not promote any real desire in you to ward the Light!

These are the problems you should be taking into your meditations for solutions and they are the very things that Lucid Dreams attempt to guide you on. They are also the very things that I, Paul am constantly sending out to you on a one-on-one basis and my attempts to invade your Normal Dream states via Trance Levels of Thought Transference in an attempt to get you to wake-up in your Dream and become Lucid and let you take over and learn these things on your own. These attempts on my part are done from a Trance State and eventually I will get through to you “IF” you exert the effort on your end to receive me; and when me, then others, too.

Foolish and unwarranted Fear, then, a product of “self,” shuts out the Spirit by disallowing you the Freedom necessary to Receive Spirit. (Foolish and unwarranted Fear are also the causes of temper, hate, anger, bigotry, etc.).

By a quick mental perusal of The Message we can identify at least five different types of dreamers:

1. The Dreamer who doesn't dream.
2. The Day dreamer.
3. The Nightmare dreamer.
4. The Normal Sleep dreamer.
5. The Lucid but asleep dreamer.

Taking them in the order listed we can also give them a general description using the same quick perusal of mentation.

The first is the True Dreamer – the Transcender. The Conscious, True, Visionist. The Creative Imaginative One. The Prophet. The Spirit Guide in the NOW. The transcender doesn't dream because he has no place left to “walk” – he or she has been everywhere.

The second is the Conscious Reverie – a fanciful lull in which a person becomes deeply engrossed in one thought – often wishful and vain.

The third is the fearful one – the Dis-Eased one – the one suffering an Agony of Conscience.

The fourth is the most common – A sequence of thoughts, images, sensations, memories and superstitions passing through the mind of the sleeper.

The fifth is as given and being given to The 13 in the Lessons on Lucid dreaming, of which this lesson is one. Going on, let me say this:

The Lucid Dream is a sort of simulation of an OBE – a possible step prior to and just below the Uniting of “The Opposites” – the Vessel Mind and the spirit mind – you and You, then, who are always together as physical body and spiritual body everywhere and, in all situations, but not always United. The True-Self is always where you are in the Present Now but it can, and does, project its “mind” elsewhere regardless of whether you are Awake or Asleep – even in death the spirit is with the body for seventy-two hours, or longer even, if the Lower Mind is Earthbound.

Now I want each of you to clearly Understand that the Lucid Dream is not a substitute for Meditation – it is a possible, alternative route to an OBE and more importantly, it is a Spirit tool for Guidance and Enlightenment but useful only if you can understand the guidance and react positively to it.

In closing this Lesson Eight I want to leave you with a general explanation of Why you dream. I will deliberately avoid the scientific theories which deal in the sub-liminal, the sub-conscious and the unconsciousness in order to explain the Consciousness as it relates to the asleep state as well as the awake states. As you will hear in the “Secrets of the Minds” Communications, sub-titled “Consciousness of Consciousness” all this mumbo-jumbo of and about the Conscious Mind is really not necessary nor factual.

So, Why do you dream?

Dreams are your own attempts to balance your own life. They are guidances from the higher mind of spirit to the lower mind of the physical. It's your Common Sense attempting to program upwards your common sense, to instruct you on just what to do to develop a creative, caring, loving, satisfactory and happy day to day life. They solve problems you are willing to take into them in the same manner The Meditation session can be utilized, and they help prepare you for the future by giving you a preview of life before you live it. In fact, when you can go to sleep with an Ease-of-Mind you can never begin a new day unrehearsed. These dreams also help you to digest what has taken place in your waking states also, and present

guidance on how best to use the everyday lessons of life to further oneself both physically and spiritually.

These dreams are not a matter of some sub-conscious or unconscious mind at work, but the ever operative and Active Mind at work in you, regardless if you are Awake or Asleep, in trance or not, the Macro is Always Active with micro mind instilling “Awareness,” the true Consciousness, of their connection with the Omniscience of the ALL of the All in ALL.

And All of this applies to what we cite as Normal dreaming. In the Lucid Dream we are not only Immediately Aware of All This, as we are also in our True Meditations, but of much more. This “much more” will be covered in the next Lessons on Lucid Dreaming and in the Most Important Communications of the 13, the “Secrets of the Minds,” sub-titled, “Consciousness of Consciousness.”

I believe for now you have enough to work on and Understand.

For Unity and Peace,

I, Paul

## **Lesson #9: Lucid Dreams - III**

Greetings my dear brothers, sisters, and partners, you of The 13.

Just as LIFE has set some things in broad daylight, and has given us some certain knowledge, though limited in comparison to All that is available, probably as a taste of what intellectual creatures are capable of, to excite in us a desire and endeavor after a better way, so, in the greater part of our concernment, LIFE has afforded us only the twilight, as I may say so, of probability, suitable, I presume, to that state of distortion or mediocrity and probationership LIFE has been pleased to place us in here; perhaps to check our overconfidence and assumptions, we might, by every day's experience be made sensible of our short-sightedness and liableness to error; the sense whereof might be a constant reminder and admonition to us to spend the days of this our pilgrimage with industry and care in the search and following of that Way which may lead us to a state of greater perfection, it being highly Rational to Think, even were Revelation silent in the case, that as Men and Women employ those talents and gifts LIFE has given them here, they shall accordingly receive justice at the close of the day, when the sun sets, and night puts an end to their labor, but not to their Dreams, for they

are forever.

We should now be far enough along to state, positively, that the Lucid Dream is a gateway to mystical experiences. Lucid Dreams have the same contents as high meditation periods because both are part of the mystic process. We will call Lucid Dreams, “The microcosm of the mystical experience,” then.

Now since all of you have not, to the best of your knowledge anyway, experienced the Lucid Dream, we will begin herein with The Induction Process because they can be induced.

The Process, much like the Preparation for Meditation, begins with a calmness of mind and of body and a quiet, undisturbed location. Now sitting in a relaxed and quiet frame of mind allow a peaceful calm to envelop your whole being and think only about what it is you are attempting to do – program yourself to have a Lucid Dream. Now in this relaxed and peaceful state choose an object, any one object close to you and stare at it intently but with calmness and relaxation at the same moment. Now, taking a vivid picture of this selected object with your eyes mentally impress this image on your mind and very seriously say “I see this object (name it, such as a clock) in my dreams, I know I am dreaming.” Repeat this to yourself

out loud several times while gazing intently at the object. Then stare at the farthest place away from the object and neutralize your gaze for several moments by simply staring at a far wall, or whatever, without identifying it or thinking about it much. Then return your gaze to your chosen object and focus on it steadily and peacefully and repeat the same statement as above, “I see the clock before me in my dream, I know I am dreaming.” Then look away, at the wall, or whatever, and repeat the process four or five times and then get on with the business of the day. This whole process will only take about five minutes and you should do it at least five times a day, the last time just before going to sleep, and you should do this every day, continuously, until you have a Lucid Dream wherein the object will be the first thing or almost the first thing you will see in the Dream and you will say “I see the clock before me, I “know” I am dreaming.”

Most people who take this seriously and practice it faithfully usually induce a Lucid Dream in around two weeks or less and some even on the very first try.

Now if the object you have chosen to gaze at is not available to you throughout the day, you can close your eyes and vividly imagine the object and repeat the statement given, opening your eyes to give the same effect

as staring away from the object at a blank wall or whatever. The point in all this is that you do it as often as possible until you do induce the lucidity you are seeking in the dream state. This simple process is nothing more than a use of the Power of Suggestion and Repetition being carried over into the sleep state.

One may also use the Meditation Process to induce the Lucid Dream. At the end of one's meditation simply plant the suggestion that you will have a Lucid Dream the next time you return to the Sleep State and you do this at the end of each meditation exercise until you reap the desired results.

Next, I want to address the problem of how you can "know" if you are actually experiencing lucidity in the dream state or not. You're dreaming and all of a sudden you become aware that you are dreaming or you believe you are - all the signs are there that you are but you want to "prove it" - simply command the dream scape to change. If you are in a forest, command the forest to change into, say, the seaside or a mountainside, or, in the forest, pick out some certain object in the dream scape and command it to change into something else - anything that comes into your consciousness. If the change occurs then you "know" for sure that you are Lucid and your Creative

Imagination is fully operative and working via your commands.

This type of experience in which one influences the actual content of the Lucid Dream is a prelude to a certain type of psychic and intuitive power. This creative power can be exercised both in the dream state and in the waking state through the channeling of telepathic communication and visualization. (I have successfully used this power on numerous occasions and I will relate to you some of these in a later lesson on Lucid Dreams.)

If we haven't made it clear up to now let me remind you all that in your attempts to induce Lucidity in the dream state, one must never approach it with a self-seeking intentions other than the desire to experience the Lucid Dream state itself. Leave All Acquisitive desires behind then until you are actually in the Lucid State and then, once having surveyed the dream scape and scenario itself, you are free to acquire knowledge through observations and or questions to others who may be present in the particular dream or through your attempts to change the dream scape itself to suit your motives or desires. The psyches do not give up their secrets through demands of a self-seeking one, yet these higher minds are perfectly patient teachers and continue to wait our

approach through any and All channels to teach us what we Need to know, but all such teaching is strictly measured by our effort and levels of Preparation to Receive such teachings and our ability to perceive that we are receiving such.

Now all Lucid Dreams begin from an ordinary dream and involves a three-step transition. This three-step transition of consciousness from ordinary dreaming to pre-lucid dreaming to full Lucid Dreaming is quite interesting in that the pattern seems always to be inescapable. I can best illustrate all this by relating to you my own experiencing of the process as follows.

I'm not sure of the exact date of this dream but it was in 1984 for that was the year I experienced most of my Lucid Dreams and this was one of my first or early ones so it was in the summer. I am dreaming and all of a sudden, I see myself in bed asleep. I do not remember the room or the bed I am in but I do know I am looking at me sleeping. I have a strange feeling of consciousness coming over me but I am not sure if I am dreaming or not - I could be out of body but I did not prepare to go out, so I am a bit confused at the moment. I continue to feel a surge of energy going through me and I become conscious of a tingling sensation in my hands and I quickly realize that this wouldn't be so

in a OBE so I rub them together and the energy flow increases as I do this and the feeling is so unique that I realize I am dreaming and not in an OBE and I am delighted that I am in a lucid state and I begin to explore where I am and what it is I was dreaming about but the moment I decide this the whole scene changed and I am in a room, alone, sitting at a table with a bottle of whiskey and a glass half full of it. I decide that since I am lucid, I might as well have a drink and I reach for the glass on the table in front of me and when I pick it up it isn't a glass of whiskey but a pen and the bottle is now a pad of paper. Nothing else in the room has changed. To say the least, I am startled by all this, in fact I don't like it - I want the drink back and in anger I decide to throw the pen across the room and just as I raise my arm to do so there comes a knock on the door. Up to this time I was not aware of any door. I turned toward the sound of knocking and at the same time I saw the door and heard another knock I dropped the pen and the glass broke and the whiskey splashed on my bare feet and I jumped away. I say to the door "wait a minute" and I go across the room and from under the bed (which now has reappeared) I get my shoes and put them on and I go to the door and open it. As I threw the door open a blast of bright sunlight burst in upon me and I gasped, moved back and then saw that no one was there but I distinctly heard a

voice say “write.” I stepped outside and saw that I was in the woods somewhere but there was no one in sight. I spent a moment looking at the woods, the sky, and went back in to clean up the broken glass noticing that I was living in a log cabin. Inside I noticed for the first time that it was rather dim in there with only a small oil lamp burning on a little table which I did not recall seeing earlier. When I went to pick up the glass it was gone, and in its place, lying on the floor was a pen. Confused, I picked it up and sat down at the table on which, now, was a bottle of whiskey, a glass half full of whiskey and a writing pad. “Write” the voice had said. I wrote the following:

A cow or an ass that may happen to pass

A voice in the sleep, a “self” that you meet

A name or a word by chance overheard

If you dream it consciously you know it spiritually.

That’s it. I stopped writing and then I read it for the first time and I did not understand it and didn’t understand it until sometime later but the whole experience was a teaching and to get to it, I had gone through the three-step transition peculiar to all Lucid Dreams. I’ll give you all a chance to solve this dream and I’ll give you its interpretation when we get to the appropriate Lessons on

## “Interpreting Dreams, ordinary and Lucid.”

Now as I “felt” the strange sense of consciousness coming over me in this dream, and seeing myself sleeping, I must have lost all recall of what the ordinary dream was all about and it was at this stage that I wondered if I was dreaming or not. It was at this point that I was entering what I call the pre-lucid state. From this I learned that it was normal to wonder, to question, or even to doubt, if one is dreaming or not, and this is good. Let me explain. The dreamer may ask “I wonder if this is a dream”? Or he or she may state outright, “No, this cannot possibly be a dream.” In either case they have posed the valuable question, but have not yet reached full, affirmative resolution of it in their own Consciousness. If the dreamer can move through this doubt and uncertainty and enter into full clarity – the “I know I am dreaming” stage then he or she has advanced into the fully lucid state from the three-step process peculiar to reaching the Lucid Dream State. Obviously, then, there are degrees of lucidity and until they are learned they can be misleading and the fine line between the final state and an actual OBE are matters for experience and of questioning as to where one actually is – in an OBE or in a Full Lucid Dream (after All, people have been known to fall asleep during meditation periods).

In concluding this Lesson Nine let me give you one example of Dream Interpretation in order to give you some insight into the mechanics of it.

### **The Dream**

I'm at the wheel of a sailing ship in a raging storm, the darkness of the night illuminated only momentarily by flashes of lightning. I'm alone, I'm afraid, and I cannot see anything due to the rain and darkness. I'm desperately struggling with the wheel and screaming at the top of my lungs for help, for the crew to come to my assistance but no one comes, and the storm keeps increasing in its intensity. Every flash of lightning outlines a huge obstacle in my way - another ship, a high cliff, a huge wave - all of which I battle with the wheel to avoid in the ever-returning darkness. I continue all the while to scream for help, for the crew to come to my assistance, thinking all through this, how lucky I was I hadn't run into anything yet, but terribly afraid that my luck couldn't last much longer.

Finally, in desperation and in a terrible fit of anger at the crew's lack of response to my calls and screams, I leave the wheelhouse and go in search of the malingering crew whom I now fully blame for all my troubles and peril.

Outside the wheelhouse I find the deck deserted and with my rage increasing I fight my way along the wave

swept and wave tossed deck to the hatchway to below deck and after struggling against the wind I throw it open and go below.

Below, the Passage Way is dark and quite deserted and a terrible, horrible feeling of aloneness creeps all over and through me and the icy coldness of fear envelops me and then I see a dim ray of light at the end of the passage way coming from the bottom of another hatchway. I proceed quickly to it, throw it open and step into what appears to be another wheelhouse, only this one has no windows, only solid paneling around it, but there is a wheel and there is a man at it, apparently steering the ship quite calmly and efficiently. Just as I begin to speak to this man he turns around and I am face to face with “myself”! I wake up and get up and begin at once to think about this dream, making notes, and attempting to solve its significance and meaning.

### **The Interpretation**

Obviously, and for many reasons, this was not a Lucid Dream but an ordinary dream yet the lesson was there and it was clear enough for a positive discernment.

This ship represented my life, the storm its trials and trepidations, and, with me at the wheel, things were not going well. Fear set in from my sense of “aloneness,”

which I quickly converted to hate and anger towards “those people” (the imaginary crew) refusing to help me. The other “ships,” “cliffs,” “huge waves” were barriers, all illusionary. Going below I find that I am not alone and that my life is sailing along smoothly and calmly simply because I am not sailing, steering the course, but my True-Self is, and I “see” when I cease thinking and acting that I am alone and turn my life over to a better steerer or driver, I have no basis for fear or hate or panic or anger and that all the barriers of life are my own creation.

Although I haven’t presented you with an elaborate interpretation, I believe you have been given enough for you to get the picture.

As I said earlier, we will get into dream discernment in due time. So, for now, I remain,

your brother,

I, Paul S.G.

## **Lesson #10: Lucid Dreams - IV**

Greetings to you my dear brothers, sisters and partners, you of The 13.

Apart from what we have already told you about the usefulness of a Lucid Dream I want to point out that a great part of “I the Alcoholic” was written through information garnered while in a Lucid Dream State. Lucid Dreaming is Enlightenment.

So, it would be fair to state that the Lucid Dream State is also “a medium for Receivings.” Because of this, your recording of your dreams in an orderly and disciplined manner takes on a greater sense of urgency and importance.

The ability “to Receive” is inherent in All of us, yet some have a problem of being capable of “sitting down” and Receiving because they lack the Order and Disciplines necessary to do so. Lack of concentration, dis-order, “self” and so forth, are matters that block your Receptivity to Spirit. In other words, the lack of Preparation and the absence of seriousness and total sincerity are barriers to your attempts to Receive Spirit. Spirit never ceases in its sendings so the lack of receivings obviously lies with the Receivers or would-be Receivers.

There is a very profound connection between Contemplative Meditation, Contemplative Lucid Dreaming, and Contemplative Receiving. All are matters of Altered Consciousnesses, Concentration, Diminishing or Increasing Awareness, Imagination, Memory and Suggestion, the very Powers of such, then, as windows of opportunities which the Message in various ways has clearly pointed out to us.

All are very deeply involved in such matters as out of body experiences, ESP, Telepathy, Clairvoyance, Precognition and so forth. As we know from the Message all human beings have the inherent abilities to experience these matters but they can be readily and easily taught to Prepared People who are Emotionally, Mentally and Spiritually in Control. Those who cannot control such matters as fear, anger, hate, likes and dislikes, etc. cannot qualify as members of the Order of Thirteen simply because they are failures in self-mastery, lacking the power of self-discipline and the ability to manifest the Obedience demanded of Spirit Guides.

Therefore, a Spirit Guide is not and cannot be inferior to any person, place or thing here. A Spirit Guide is a Spirit Guide, then, and as such they carry everything Good, Right and True with them, and Need be All Things to All people

whenever the particular circumstance or situation deems it necessary but they actually cannot be any of these things mentally, emotionally or spiritually that are not good, right and true. A Vestured Spirit Guide of the Order of Thirteen can neither join or be a member of any temporal secular society or organization other than the Family or the Order of Thirteen within the Family. Spirit Guides simply cannot serve two ways, two messages, nor two masters here.

All of the above fully complies with your Discernment on Freedom which you all agreed to and signed (see, for example, Freedom, Page 1, Paragraph 3).

None of this is to say that a Spirit Guide is aloof from people, places or things, for that is not so. Love and Respect and Happiness and Enjoyment are all matters that do matter to Spirit Guides but inferiority is not and will not be tolerated any more than enslavement or bondage to any Person, Place, or Thing here, will be. The All-Inclusive Power of the Will when Activated in you by you is all the Power you or anyone Needs to fulfill all the Requirements and Mandates of the Order of Thirteen and the One Way of the Message of I Paul. A Spirit Guide, then, must have complete, Mental, Emotional and Spiritual Freedom, an Ease of Mind in order to Do the Things expected of all Spirit

Guides and, especially so, for all Practicing Spirit Guides of the Order of Thirteen, the Servant Slave “storm troopers” of The LIGHT.

This, then, is where Faith, Hope, and Love come in and hold sway. Regardless of the Circumstances, if you do not hold a Full Measure of Faith in the Way to “The Way” or in yourself to control your Mind and your Acts through the Way, then you have no hope, and without these two (Faith and Hope) you have no Real Love or Trust in Christ and the Mind of Christ and are, therefore, weak and barren and without Real Courage and a solid desire for Freedom. If so, you will know no Peace, hold no Ease of Mind and be unable to Act Natural as a Spirit Guide must and therefore never know Unity in the Clear Light of the Truth.

Personally, since I, Paul answer only to Spirit and follow only Spirit, I belong only to the Universal Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL.

Next, I think it appropriate that we lay down some guidelines and definitions of what Lucid Dreams are and are not to avoid later confusion:

1. A Lucid Dream is not the experience of waking up in the middle of the night.

The term “awakening” in reference to Lucid Dreams is

a metaphor, analogous to the concept of a Spiritual Awakening. The term awakening as used in this context is an attempt to describe the definite shift in consciousness that occurs as the dreamer shifts from one level of Awareness to another, as he moves from the normal ordinary dream into the Lucid Dream. This shift of conscious Awareness (an altered consciousness then) often feels like an expansion or opening and is most often quite exhilarating, so that it is easily confused or compared to an awakening. However, this awakening to a new level of Awareness occurs within the normal or ordinary dream. In a normal dream we awaken from the dream, whereas in a Lucid Dream we awaken in the dream. In all Lucid Dream experiences, one knows with certainty, after becoming lucid, that they have not awakened from their sleep.

2. The Lucid Dream is not identical to the pre-lucid dream.

In a pre-lucid dream, the dreamer may be on the verge of or very close to becoming lucid. In these dreams the dreamer typically asks “Am I dreaming?” or “I wonder if this can be a dream?” or he may say “this can’t be a dream” in a sort of voluntary denial. In these types of dreams, although the crucial question of lucidity has been asked, it remains unanswered and unclear in the dreamer’s

mind. Pre-lucid dreams are of special value because the dreamer is at least raising the Creative question about lucidity and pointing his attention in that direction. Usually, these dreams are important as self-confirmatory steps along the path to lucidity, assisting and stimulating the dreamer to persevere in becoming Fully Lucid. Pre-lucid dreams are also characterized by other phenomena, such as false awakenings, flying dreams, or seeing one's cue for lucidity in the dream without subsequently becoming lucid. The False Awakening for example, is a common dream phenomenon in which the dreamer dreams that he awakens. Usually, this part of the dream is so literal and convincing that the dreamer does not realize that he is still dreaming. Upon awakening, however, he is often surprised to realize that the earlier "Awakening" was actually a part of his dream.

In Lesson Nine I gave you "the clock method," the seeing of the clock in your dream. If you see "the clock" in your dream but do not become lucid then, we call this the missing of one's cue, and regard it as another important aspect of the pre-lucid dream. The partial clarity of mind that often develops with the pre-lucid state is a valuable and enjoyable harbinger of things to come. The full clarity of the Lucid State, however, will be Recognized by its intensity and impact when it eventually arrives.

3. The Lucid Dream is not identical to being “completely” in charge of one’s own dream.

As I have said earlier, you can exert a lot of power and authority in a Lucid Dream once you get the feel of them but you cannot totally or “completely” control everything in a Lucid Dream if your True-Self is taking an Active Role in the Dream for higher purposes other than a Teaching. The Lucid Dreamer can control his own movements and thoughts within the dream scape and change even that by a simple thought projection. For example, if the dreamer is being attacked by a ferocious animal, he can by a simple conscious thought turn that charging animal into a butterfly or rabbit. The Lucid Dreamer usually holds a tremendous sense of ease and fearlessness in Lucid Dreams when the dreamer is fully conscious that he is dreaming and such things as “enemies” are dream images and can therefore be changed or totally eliminated. Lucidity, essentially speaking, is a conscious opportunity to be “in charge” of one’s own actions and the dream scape. A Lucid Dreamer, then, can usually project any thought from his own creative mind into the surrounding dream scape and thereby transform his dream scenario simply by wishing for a transformation to occur.

Of course, you must Remember to Remember that in a

Lucid Dream you are Conscious and as such the rule of not being inferior to any place, thing or person, or Absolute and, of course, never Superior Absolutely. Acting Natural with its Ease of Mind, then, applies wherever and whenever you are Conscious or Aware, then. And once you master this, Lucid Dreaming, Out of Body Experiences, and Transcendings come easier. (It was during an OBE via a Lucid Dream that I learned a very simple formula for Change or the Altering of one's Consciousness Upwards - You can alter your life simply by Altering your Attitudes which in turn Alters your emotions which in turn alters all your thinking which alters your Actions and Reactions.) I might also add that this formula is a very simple way of ridding oneself of "self" - the attitude maker!

4. For enlightenment purposes, the emphasis of "control" in a Lucid Dream is better placed upon one's personal control and conduct in the Dream rather than on the Content of the Dream and the dream scape.

Based on personal experiences I have concluded that the lucid dreamer is best able to take charge of his personal experience in the dream and not attempt to alter the dream scape too vigorously. A Lucid Dreamer who can remain in control of his own experiences throughout the variations

that may present themselves, retain his poise, his balance and fearlessness in the face of whatever is presented to him has a much greater chance of garnering Knowledge from the experience.

5. What then are the advantages and the differences between exercising control over the dream and being in charge of oneself in the dream?

To exercise control is to regulate, dominate, manipulate the elements of the dream scape, that is, to focus one's attention primarily on the world outside of oneself. By contrast, to be in charge within the dream is to be empowered internally, that is, to focus one's attention primarily on the world that exists inside oneself. To make this distinction more lucid let me give you an Analogy: In the Lucid Dream the Dreamer is like the skillful, conscious sailor who is in charge of his sailboat as it moves about in a powerful and highly unpredictable environment. In the boat he is surrounded by powerful forces of different kinds, the waves, the currents, the pulling of the tides, and the winds and its changes, bringing the possibilities of storms. If he is Conscious of all these forces, he can seek to align his craft with them and in such a way to face any circumstance that may arise with a tremendous feeling of

satisfaction, courage, and immense personnel Power and the Freedom of an Ease of Mind, come what may. A conscious or “lucid” sailor knows he cannot control the forces of nature nor would he even think in those terms. He knows his course and his water because he “knows” his charts and he trusts them, so he concentrates fully on moving with the elements, feeling, thinking, living, and acting in harmony with them. Out of this Awareness, this empowerment through surrender of the “self” he has learned to Fully Master his Craft. He maintains a constant vigilance towards the Changings of These Forces around him so that he can shift, change his course when the forces shift and therefore remain Master of his own Craft. In a way, the Conscious sailor becomes one with his ship, and his ship becomes an extension of his Consciousness. As the sailor Masters this Art of Attunement, flexibility and instant alignment with the circumstances around him he becomes both a more powerful and more sensitive and positive helmsman. One, then, qualified to Master any ship. Great satisfaction will come to him in those experiences of Lucidity in his Dreams and in Higher States where he is most alert in caring for himself as all of the Elements and Energies and Powers within these various States are moving and surging all about him.

In Lucid Dreams the characters and colors and

symbols in the dream scape always seem to retain a life of their own. They can change, shift or simply vanish in an instant. Like his counterpart, the lucid sailor, the Lucid Dreamer, will experience his greatest pleasure and his greatest satisfaction, not only from his moments of greater alertness and deep mental clarity but also from the moments that he totally surrenders his “self” and from feeling his deepest harmony and oneness with his True-Self, the Cosmos, and the Powers and Energies of the New Worlds opened to him.

In a Fully Lucid Dream the dreamer can be in such a state of Inner Enlightenment where he is so Fully in Harmony with his Inner World that he can Consciously and Easily Transcend! The spirit willing.

One thing is for sure, if you can do all these things in a Lucid Dream you absolutely positively can also do them in your Awake States and, if so, you can OBE and Transcend (at least the first time) beginning from such a state and following the directions of the Message to Uniting the Opposites and making the Journey of a Life Time here.

As I, Paul, see it, you have three basic problems holding up your Journey.

1. You cannot totally project your Wholeness because that Wholeness is, as yet, in part

divided by the “self.”

2. You cannot project your Will because the human individual will is, as yet, in part divided from The WILL.
3. You cannot project your individual spirit because that Complex Being is, as yet, in part divided, not completely compounded, your mind is missing.

As the Master said, If you want to enter into Life then keep my Commandments. Jesus also said that anyone desirous of coming after him must deny their self and Come, Follow him. Obviously, these sayings demand a change on our part, a change involving Attitudes and Behavior.

You simply cannot exert an attitudinal and a behavioral Change unless you can accomplish a Mind Change, a change that allows you to Act Natural, then.

Go and sell all you have, give it to the poor, and Come, Follow Me and I will give you the Truth and the Truth will set you Free. So having nothing is not the key to Freedom, it is only the beginning to attaining it. All you need do is sell out “self” and embrace True-Self, Think, Love, Obey and you too can enter into Life and be Free.

To Do this you must be willing to pay the price and that price is To Think, To Love, and To Obey the Spirit Message of I Paul, the Way to “The Way.”

You exert the effort to control your Mind by following the directions of the Message and cease allowing persons, places and things to control your emotions, your attitudes and your behavior. Leave “wants” alone and pursue only honest “Needs.” Forget all about likes and dislikes and pursue only Love and Truth. Always Acting Natural and Doing only the Good, the Right, and the True via The Way to “The Way” by the very power of your own volition united with the Mind of Christ.

You see, you simply cannot hold Divine Consciousness until you Recognize it and Follow It in your every Word, Act and Deed, all of which is a simple Matter of Conscience. Acting Natural is what being Moral and Ethical means to me, and to any Spirit Guide worth his or her Salt and Light.

In closing this Lesson Ten let me leave you with this: The real Voyage of the Message, the Voyage of Discovery, consists not in merely locating the New Worlds, but in Finding New Eyes with which to “see” them and to See the Light! All Living Things are constantly changing and if these “living things” do not quickly and correctly adjust to these “Changings” they either do not survive or, if

surviving they do not Advance, go anywhere. Clearly the Choice is theirs.

So, I, Paul, say to you of The 13, if you do not completely Trust the Message of I Paul to totally Guide and Supply you with all the Power and Energy you Need to Live the Good and the Abundant Life then you are not worthy nor qualified to be a Spirit Guide. The Way to “The Way” is quite capable to give you more than you Need to Act Natural, hold an Ease of Mind, and Follow and speak the Truth with Love and Respect and Freedom no matter where you are or go, and to live your life here in an Attitude of Obedience and Devotion to the LIGHT and to carry that Power and Wisdom everywhere you go and expound it always in every Creative Outlet you can locate. As a Spirit Guide member of the Order of Thirteen in the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the ALL in ALL, you need to remember that your true citizenship lies elsewhere, your Loyalty and Trust and Conformity, then, is not to this world nor its materialistic gods, but to the New Worlds, then, through the Lucid LIGHT of the Truth and Its Mind, the Will That Wills Above All wills.

With All Love

Your brother

I, Paul. S.G.

All Spirit Guides are A Spiritual and, especially so, A  
Spiritual of The LIGHT. Period.

## **Lesson #11: Volition**

### **“The Power of The Mind of Christ”**

Greetings to you my dear Sisters and Brothers, you of The Thirteen.

It's time you all began to Live from the Higher Expression of Life, inferior to nothing and no thing you can find here. The Pathway to Spiritual Independence is no Easy Road and few there are who are willing to walk it, and those who are willing to work, quickly learn that there is No Compromise with Spiritual Matters, Period.

The Way and the Rule of Life come from the Spirit Kingdom of God to us from the Mind of Christ, the Power and Wisdom of LIFE, and those who OBEY, Follow, then, the Mind of Christ are the ONE'S who DO live the Higher Expression of Life and Fully Enjoy its Gifts, Mentally, Emotionally, Physically, and Spiritually.

Those who Follow the Way to “The Way” Exactly as given are those who have found the Inner Eye, the eye of the heart, of love, of wisdom and of volition. “The eye is the lamp of your body. So, if your eye is sound, your whole body will be full of light, but if your eye is not sound, your whole body will be full of darkness.” Those words of the Master remind us that the important thing in human life is

to “see,” to be “Full of Light,” not to walk or talk or be in the Darkness! And the Way to “The Way” is the One Way Free of all Darkness!

In the Order of Thirteen a Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave to the LIGHT of LIFE, the Whole LIGHT then, must be In The Way to The Way, the Only Way, then, open to them. Any other Going Along to Get Along, here, is not open to them. It is better to Go Alone, here, than to Conform to this World and thereby compromise Spiritual matters, which, incidentally is the One Thing No Spirit Guide can Do. And you cannot be a Spirit Guide without having had a Personal Spiritual Experience which has Absolutely Nothing to do with this World, or its People, Places and Things.

You see, any and all of Life’s Problems denote a Need and signify some Lack, and the biggest mistake people make here who have a problem is to dwell on the problem instead of Concentrating and Acting on the Answer to the Problem and, that answer, lies in the Message of I Paul, and Nowhere else. It’s these Answers from the Message that you carry into and explicate in your Creative Outlets, setting the Example by your Presence and experiences from your Following of the Way to “The Way.” On the other hand, if the Way is not doing for you, then you have

no business here in the Order of Thirteen simply because you are not doing for the Message and “The Way.”

Furthermore, you simply cannot Act within a Duality of Minds unless you are firmly anchored to the Way to “The Way” and, if so, you cannot be anything but a LIGHT Spiritual, a Spirit Guide, Then.

For me, a bona fide Practicing Spirit Guide, Spirit Channel, Medium and Prophet etc., the Message of I Paul comes First and Foremost and is the Only Way I know and Recognize and the Only Safe Way for me. You can take a clue from all of that or not – it’s your Choice to be a Spirit Guide or not in the Order of Thirteen, but the title is empty and useless unless you fill it, and more.

The Order of the Thirteen must always and in All Ways be a Solidly United Team of Equals, one minded on the Way to “The Way,” all headed in one direction with one Primary Goal with an Order of business unfettered and unobstructed by any other Persons, Places, or Things of this World, and you do this, not by magic, but by Fellowship, hard work, Friendship, long hours of repetitive study and Practice until you can follow, do obey the Mind of Christ and love Doing it.

You should all by Now Understand that the Mind of Christ is the Key you have been searching for, the Key to All

Things, both Physically and Spiritually, and the One Gift most often Abused and Ignored by men and women here on W-303.

To overcome these negatives, you all Need put yourselves through a rigid and honest Reevaluation and put your “houses” in Order and Come to the Full Understanding that here, as a Seated 13, a Whole New Concept of Preparation and Responsibilities fall upon you in addition to what the Message requires, in fact, altering or completely upgrading many of the Requirements of the Message of I Paul. Here you are not simply Christian Spiritualists trying to improve their lot in life, but True LIGHT Spirituals and that means an entirely New Step Up on the Way to “The Way” to the Inner Circle of the Full Light where All Practicing Spirit Guides are Always expected.

And now we get to the crux of this Lesson. If the Mind of Christ is God’s Will what do you suppose your mind is, or better, supposed to be? After all how would you interpret Conscience? And what do we mean by the Inner-Eye Volition? And how are you to use this inner-eye complex to Obey the Mind of Christ? “The Way” to the “Happening” of the All in All, then!

I, Paul, want to make it Perfectly Clear to the Order of

Thirteen that it is not by might, nor by wealth, nor by chance, nor by seizure, but by Love and Spirit and Volition that the Way to “The Way” is attained and held. It is in the Divinity which embraces the spirits of all mankind and which, therefore, sees Universal History as the process of our becoming True Sons and True Daughters of God, so that we mere humans have to find and exercise that inner-eye which moves us Upwards toward Wisdom and Nearer to Perfection.

Obviously then, A True LIGHT Spiritual's worth should be measured by the Light and Warmth of his or her Inner-Eye more than by the quickness of his or her mouth, for without heart, love, wisdom and Volition we are truly nothing and can be no thing here. You see nothing here can compensate for a lack of these matters that Do matter, while on the other hand, the True “Seeing” of the Inner-Eye Compensates for ALL Things.

These four, the heart, love, wisdom and volition are the great movers, the powerful motivators, the enormous Doers, the tremendous Uniters, and subtle Peacemakers, the ineffable Pathfinders and Keepers of All Things Good, Right and True.

Being from the old school of Spiritualism, I, Paul, believe and advocate, that everyone Needs to believe in

something, and that everyone ought to settle upon, and then Follow, some Way of Life, and those that Choose the Love and Truth of the Way to “The Way” of the Message and live by it, simply cannot go wrong, come what may here. As a True Christian Spiritual, I know that my citizenship lies elsewhere, yet being separated from this World I am committed to work for its Well-Being and the Well-Being of its All in All. I know that I am of the Family that was created before the Sun and the Moon of this Earth, and that the very foundation of the Divine Plan must be Love and Truth and the Mind of Christ and their flow and operation in the Lives of mankind and their histories. The Family I belong to is not primarily that of an aggregate of Christian Spiritualists on this earth, but of a Cosmic Kingdom Citizenship reaching out to all the Earths and gathering into its own embrace the “scattered stranger” communities. The Ideal from such a foundation would, could only be, then, Universal Unity and Peace, the very Well-Being of All in All then, through the heart, the love, the wisdom and the Volition of men and women everywhere. In fact, our Table Fellowship once a month is Symbolic of our sharing the Common Meal with our Brothers and Sisters of the Universal Family here, there, Everywhere.

Now it may be pleaded that none of us is perfect, so

how can we hope to obtain a perfect solution to our problems? Without the Message of I Paul we could not hope to solve all our problems but with it there is a Way if only we will rise up to it. You can all begin by trying to mind your own business, by trying to obtrude your “infirmities” as little as possible by directing your minds toward the Ideal – the Divine Universal Plan. In this way you could expect to learn more helpfully what would contribute to the Common Good, the Well-Being of All, then, and you would be moving in the Way of the Spirit in your own time and generation here within the limitations of what, so far, has accrued to you of Knowledge, Understanding, and Experience, and this requires a tenacious devotion to hold to Heart, to Love, to Wisdom, and to Volition – Volition being a matter that does matter and means to a True LIGHT Spiritual the means of Using the Will in a most Loving and Obedient Way.

“The Mind of Christ is an Instrument of Command for the minds to use. “The Will,” then, is Higher than the minds, and hence its rightful prerogative to govern and direct the minds. This prerogative to govern and direct therefore passes through the higher mind where it becomes the Conscience’s prerogative to govern and direct the lower mind which then has the prerogative to govern and direct the Words, Acts, and Deeds of the Physical

Body.”

“The Will,” then, as an Instrument of Use for the Essences of Mind when properly Activated and so Used, ensures that one can be as Free as it is possible to be Free, here on this Earth, mentally and spiritually. And IF ONE IS Free Mentally, and therefore, Spiritually Free, they can exert some great Control over their own Physical Freedom in all those matters of concern that do matter and maintain an overall Order of Well-Being.

If there is One Thing, we have tried to do over the years of Receiving this Message it is to indent into the minds of the Family members the living fact that when they give “The Will” the reins and say “Drive” they are headed towards the heights of the very meaning of Well-Being here, Physically, Emotionally, Mentally, Spiritually.

The Mind of Christ involves mysteries that have never been fathomed (in view of what the Message says about mysteries, this does not imply that they cannot be fathomed). As a “faculty” of mind it is, nevertheless, a familiar and practical reality. There are those who deny Mankind’s Spiritual Nature, but few call in question the existence of Will Power in men and women (I like what the Message says about this Will Power in “Is There A God” page 19, first paragraph). While differences obtained

among scholars as to its source, its constitution, its functions, its limitations, its Freedom, all concede that the Will is an actual part of the minds of men and women and that its place and uses in their lives is of transcendent importance, disagreements as to Interpretations do not destroy facts.

The Will is sometimes defined as the “Faculty of Conscious, and especially of deliberative Action.” Whether the term “conscious” is essential to the definition is questionable. Some Actions which are unconscious are, nevertheless, probably expressions of the Will, just as some involuntary acts are certainly conscious. All voluntary acts are deliberative, for deliberation may proceed with “the swiftness of lightning,” so to say, but both deliberation and its attendant actions are not always conscious. A better definition of our Will for general use, therefore, is the power of Self-Discipline and Self-Direction, which translates into Obedience to the Activated Mind of Christ for all Spirituals through the Volition Medium.

This Power acts in conjunction with Knowledge and Feeling, but is not to be identified with them as a matter of Definition nor ought it to be confused or confounded with desire or the moral sense. One may feel without willing,

and one may will contrary to feelings as a matter of Choice. So the Choice may proceed either with Knowledge or in opposition thereto or, indeed, in a manner indifferent. Oftentimes desires are experienced which are unsupported by The Will, and the moral sense at times becomes our sole manner of Choice unless set aside by The Will in favor of what the Spirit dictates (our personal moral sense is not always correct nor moral – see Lesson 10 as to what that Moral Sense is to a Spiritual).

Obedying the Mind of Christ is the most excellent Way a person has of Doing and Being, by which the body, the mind and spirit in which it dwells, is Perfectly directed. When we choose not to Follow the Mind of Christ we are, at best, static, and when we choose to Obey we are dynamic in our Well-Being and energized in our “Recognition”! Hence, the Will is to be regarded as an energy, and where and when it is Activated in us we are Doing Well, and when it is not we are not doing very well as regards our body, emotions and mind. The beauty of this Energy is that it is Free, a Gift, and one everyone should strive to Fully Activate in their life, and why not, it doesn’t cost anything and the results are guaranteed and dynamic!

The only limitation to this Energy is a matter of personal choice, for the Mind of Christ itself has no

limitations whatsoever, while, unfortunately, you are limited by “self” and its drain on your energies and your power of Volition.

The Will then is not only a dynamic force of, in, minds, it is also a gift of Power towards a persistent adherence to Purpose and Result when Fully Activated, simply because “a chain is as strong as its weakest link,” and in this case the links consist of the Mind of Christ, the higher mind, and the lower mind, of which, only the latter can be considered “weak.”

The development of Obeying and Following the Will has no other high-Way than Absolute Adherence to wise and intelligent Resolutions. The Conduct of Life hinges on the Mind of Christ but the Mind of Christ depends upon the man and the woman for its manifestation of Purpose – the Universal Plan of the Well-Being of All in All (we do not mean to imply here that we are privy to the Universal Plan of LIFE in its entirety – we only Know that the Mind of Christ was sent for this purpose and therefore we presume it to be the most integral part of the overall Plan itself.)

Prior to the Cross the Free Will was to Choose and Act. That’s no longer strictly true. The Will doesn’t choose at all. The person Chooses. And the Choice is always followed by Volition and Volition by appropriate Action (at least

that's the way it's supposed to work).

Now to do this one must have some great measure of Faith in themselves. They must, then love themselves for who and what they truly are, a spirit, a divine then, inhabiting a body, and from this they must also understand that this whole process means that they possess themselves and are, therefore, not possessable by any external force other than what their ignorance and fear will allow, which is not really "possession" at all, but distortion, a "self" altered mind then, which blocks divine consciousness.

As we said, the person chooses. So, in a general way we can say that The Will is a "Power of Suggestion," a clue as to how we should Act or React but are Free to Act differently from that "Suggested." The choice, whatever it may be is always followed by Volition. To say that we choose to Act or React in a certain way, while abstaining from so doing, is simply to say either that, at the instant of so abstaining, we do not choose, or that we cease to choose. We must always do what we Actually Choose to do, so far as mental and physical ability permit. When they do not permit, we may desire but we do not choose in the sense of willing. In this sense Choice involves some Reason and such Reason must be sufficient in order to induce one to

Act.

A Sufficient Reason is a motive which the person approves as ground of Action. This approval precedes the Act of Choosing, that is, the Volition. This Act, therefore, involves choice among motives (ours and the Conscience via The Will) as its necessary precedent, and decision based upon our selection. When the mind approves a motive, that is, constitutes it Sufficient Reason for its Action in Volition, it has thereby chosen the appropriate act obedient to willing. The mind frequently Recognizes what, at first thought, might be regarded as Sufficient Reason for Volition, yet refrains from putting forth that Volition. In this case other motives have instantaneously contributed Sufficient Reason for inaction, or for Action opposed to that immediately before considered. This “instantaneous motive” is usually from Common Sense or “Conscience.” Hence our own common sense and intuition are also elements of our Action or Reaction.

From all of this we can perceive a number of steps connected with our Act of choosing and appropriately Acting that choice out.

1. A presentation to mind of something that should be done.
2. A presentation to mind of motives or reasons

relating to what may be done.

3. The Rise in mind of Sufficient Reason.
4. Putting forth in mind of Volition corresponding to Sufficient Reason.
5. Acting or Reacting as to choice and as a Righteous person seeking to do the Will of LIFE.

You see, we not only observe and feel our own doings and attitudes as a mass of inner facts, viewed all together, but in particular we attend to them with greater or less care, selecting now these, now those tendencies to action as the central objects in our experience of our own desires. To attend to any action or to any tendency to action, to any desire, or to any emotion, is the same thing as “to select,” or “to choose,” or “to prefer,” or “to take serious interest in,” just that tendency or deed. And such attentive (and practical) preference of one course of conduct, or of one tendency, or desire, as against all others present in our minds at any time, is called a “voluntary act.”

A motive is an appeal to person for Volition. A motive cannot be identified with the Volition to act, for it is the Reason of the Volition. The identification of motives and Volitions would involve us in an absurdity of holding that we have as many Volitions as motives, which would result

in plain contradiction. And, it may also be said, a motive is not an irresistible tendency, an irresistible tendency is not a desire, and a desire is not a Volition. In short, it is impossible to identify a Volition or a use of The Will with anything else.

But while motives must be constituted Sufficient Reasons for willing, the reason is not a cause – it is merely an occasion. The cause of the Act of the Use of the Will is the person, free to select a reason for Volition. The occasion of the Act of Volition in mind is solely the motive approved.

Motives are conditions they are not causes. The testimony that they are not determining conditions stands on the validity of the moral consciousness. The word “ought” always preaches freedom, defying gospelers and meta-physicians of all religious and pagan ways.

The Power of the Mind of Christ, the Will that Wills above all wills lies in the quality of one’s Volition, then. And this quality can be measured by its quantity of freedom that enables one to Follow and Obey the Mind of Christ in order to live from the Higher Expression of Life in all their words, acts and deeds.

When you abandon and surrender your will to the Will you then hold the Fully Activated Mind of Christ and your

Volition becomes your Freedom of, and ease of mind, witnessed through your every Act, physically, emotionally, mentally and spiritually.

The very phrase “freedom of will” is religious theological tautology from the subject of Good and Evil and the phrase “bondage of will” is a contradiction of terms. To speak of the freedom of the human will is simply to speak of its existence. A person without power to decide what he shall do is not a Whole Person in Action; body, mind and spirit wise. “The Will” is in every person but not active in every person simply because not every person is free mentally, emotionally and spiritually.

Volition may be weak, but within the limitations of weakness, freedom nevertheless obtains.

No bondage exists in the person to will somewhat. Bondage may obtain in the person, by reason of physical disorders, or of mental incapacity, or of dis-ease, or, perhaps, of environment. For the Will does not sense: that is done by the senses – it does not cognize: that is done by the intellect – it does not like or dislike or crave or loathe: that is done by the affections or the emotions – it does not judge of the nature, or of the value, or qualities of an object: that is done by the mind – it does not moralize on the right or wrong of an object, or an act of choice: that

is done by the Conscience.

The Will then is a Free Gift that requires only your Recognition, your Following, your Obedience - all through your Volition which, when given Faithfully and Lovingly you Receive the Power of and the Results of the Mind of Christ, inferior to nothing here, superior to all places and things here. This conversion of person into the Will and the Will into that Reason is the greatest Power and Freedom that person can experience in the flesh.

The action of the human will is not determined by motive but by Condition of Person, and, to a degree, except under the oppression of disease, the person may always Raise any motive to the dignity of Sufficient Reason.

Most people experience some bondage to evil, but the bondage of evil lies in the fact that the evil “self” tends to select a motive whose quality is of like character. Accountability springs from this - that evil has been permitted to establish this tendency. A force endowed with intelligence, capable of forming purposes and pursuing self-chosen ends may neglect those Rules of Action which alone can guide it safely, and thus at last wholly miss the natural end of its Being.

A person of Right Character tends to constitute right motives Sufficient Reason for Volition and if that Volition

is to always Use the Mind of Christ, the Will that Wills above all wills then Recognition in all of its Glory and Power is assuredly yours.

That all of you have a great World of opportunity awaiting your determination to grasp it is true. The person who can develop his or her Volition to the Will has it in their Power not only to control their own nature to any extent, but also to call into Action very extraordinary states of mind which they possibly never even suspected were available to them.

All that man has ever attributed to the Invisible World without, lies, in fact, within him, and the Key which will confer the faculty of Sight and power to Conquer is the Volition and its Proper and Righteous application.

“Success” is living your whole life, in, of, by, through and from the Mind of Christ.

Love and Peace

Your brother

I, Paul. S.G.

## **Lesson #12: Self-Mastery and Mind Control Yours and Others – I**

Greetings my Dear Brothers and Sisters, you of The 13.

There is only one prerequisite absolutely necessary for Self-Mastery, i.e., “The Control of One’s Mind,” and that is “Freedom”! And when we speak of Freedom, we mean Freedom from any and all persons, places, and things. This does not mean removed from, aloof to, or superior to. It simply means free from any and all control of one’s thoughts, words, acts, and deeds by any person, place or thing. Cogitate on this!

This “Freedom”! cometh not by seeing nor by hearing nor by magic, but is Earned through Effort and Determination and Perseverance. This, then, is what Paul meant when he said Be not conformed of this world but be Transformed by the Renewal of your mind!

And clearly, the Only Person, Place, or Thing standing between you and that Renewal is you! And you my dear brothers and sisters are therefore the only one, the only person who can Change you and Renew your mind and that’s the Truth that can set you Free! “IF”!

And clearly, the Keys to all of this are Order and Self-Discipline. When these are absent you are Absent – not

Present, then, not who, not what, and not where you ought to be. And you can rationalize that all you want to but to no avail – you will still be Absent, not Present.

And all of this depends on how great the quality of your Volition is. And whenever and wherever there is Volition then included automatically is the warmth of Heart, the Love and Wisdom.

Self-Mastery and the control of others through such mastery is the mark of All Practicing Spirit Guides who Practice Charity and Love and who have surrendered all notions of self-seeking interests. And it must be remembered that Charity and Love begin at home. A Practicing Spirit Guide must love himself, accept himself, listen to himself, and trust his deepest innermost feelings and instincts. Only in this way can they both follow and lead in a True Christian Spiritual Way. All Spirit Guides need people they love and who love them and they must operate in and from a climate of Trust and Union with their fellow Spirit Guides, here, there, Everywhere.

There are a number of very simple and very Ancient Principles that need be closely adhered to in both Self-Mastery and the control of others. I will preface these principles with an old adage dealing with them: “If you would work with and on any person, you must first know

their nature and their ways, and so lead them; or their ends, and so persuade them; or their weaknesses and disadvantages, and so awe them; or those who have interest in them, and so govern them.”

## **General Principles**

### **1. Belief**

Genuine belief in the thing in hand weighs mightily for success in the contact with others.

Here we are not talking about “Faith,” a subject the Message has profoundly dealt with, but with Belief in the sense of Trust and Confidence in one’s self and in one’s Source, and in one’s tasks.

That which we do not believe, we cannot adequately say though we may repeat the words over and over again we fool no one but ourselves.

### **2. Confidence**

A prime element in personal influence is Confidence. To exude Confidence usually indicates leadership culled from knowledge and courage. A Practicing Spirit Guide as a Confidant of Spirit is the epitome of Confidence wherever he or she is. Their every word, act and deed stand witness to this role of Confidant.

### **3. Enthusiasm**

Enthusiasm is a telling matter and a large factor in the overall matter of matters that do matter. Practicing Spirit Guides are never involved in matters that do not matter. There is a contagiousness in every Example of energetic conduct. The Enthusiastic Person is an inspiration to the weak, and compels them, as it were, to follow them.

### **4. “Self”-Mastery**

The absence of “self” is the key to Self-Mastery, hence the key to success, the Secret of a large control of others is found in the physical-spiritual mastery of oneself. Great Power and Energy belong to those who are Fully Human and Fully Spiritual in the “NOW”!

Keep calm, cool, logical, and you can command many – be Fully Human and Fully Spiritual and you can command everybody. As supreme governor over your own Attitudes and Emotions you wield great force over others.

Since the Message of I Paul is highly attuned to Self-Mastery as the means of one’s overall Well-Being I will only add this: People may be controlled and in an ignoble way by studying and ministering to their weaknesses and fears but a Righteous use of self-mastery has sublime privileges in exerting good influence over the weak spots

and foibles of others. In either instance the strong person is that one whose heart and love and wisdom and Volition is most steady and purposeful.

Sooner or later, however, as the Past has taught us, people discover their degradation in manipulated weaknesses, and resenting the imposition, throw off the yoke of tyranny and falsehoods, whenever the motive of fear ceases to restrain them.

## **5. Motives**

The character of one's influence over others depends on that one's overall character and upon the motives which that one suggests for their Actions.

One may dominate multitudes by fear – Nero, Hitler, and Stalin to name a few from the past. Or, love may become the controlling force in personal loyalty and trust – Jesus swayed multitudes by the inspiration of his Spirituality and goodness. In the one case influence is coercion, ceasing so soon as fear and weakness disappear, or assuming such power as to break in desperation with its own dictates – in the other case motives of freedom, fidelity, and reason are multiplied, and they become stronger as love's gracious energy continues.

If your Cause is Good, Right, and True, and your

motives Righteously and Forth-righteously presented your following is assured.

## **6. Insight**

Not surprisingly, the control of others demands ability to penetrate their motives and defenses and discover their plans and goals. Jesus was a master at this penetration through his inherent power of Insight, Instinct and Intuition. It was by these same penetrating powers that he so easily detected the feelings of the assembled crowds, and so often embarrassed his opponents by revealing their secret thoughts and motives, and laying open that which they were most anxious to conceal. There seemed to exist no social, political or religious enigma he could not solve in a purely Spiritual Way. He came at once to the most intimate secrets and his insight and sagacity was worth more to him than an army of spies in the enemy's camp. He detected in a moment every shade of character, and to express the results of his observations he invented a secret language intelligible only to himself and a small group of his followers who were scattered around Palestine. He knew the talents, virtues, qualities and vices of all he came in contact with, and at a glance he could perceive every real or apparent contradiction spoken or simply thought by others. No form of vanity, disguised ambition, self-

seeking, or treacherous proceedings could escape his Insight or Penetration, but he could also perceive good qualities, and no man had a higher esteem for energetic and active characters.

This ability may be successfully cultivated by all of you who are privileged to receive the Order of Thirteen Communications and related exercises and experiments.

In an Ancient Script it says, “Man is altogether desire (kāma), as is his desire so is his insight (kratu), as is his insight so is his deed (karma).

## **7. Cooperation**

Permanent Leadership influence over others flows from the Righteous enlistment of their strength. The supra-most individual power in this respect is gauged by the pleasure which it offers as inducement to surrender, or by the sense of right to which appeal is made for alliance, or by suggestion of the highest self-interest as a reason for loyalty and unity. The only Rule in the leading of others is the Golden Rule. In the long run, life reciprocates with those who do unto others as they would that others should do unto them. That power of volition which can compel one to be kind, considerate, patient, helpful, cheerful and loving is sure to cast a spell, a large and agreeable spell upon others – not magically but spiritually. There is a

divine reason in humanity which makes it amenable to the kingly sway of Sincerity, Reality and Righteousness.

When one succeeds, through example, in convincing others that they are genuinely possessed by an eternal Truth and Principle, the Infinite steps in and accords such a one, “Recognition,” as a Leader, and it is this that makes a Spirit Guide all a Spirit Guide need be.

## 8. Order

Unless one’s own house is in order, they can neither lead, guide, nor give orders in another. Disorder is dis-ease and there is no such a thing as a dis-eased Spirit Guide, except those known as Pretending ones, wherein the Pretension and Facade are visibly known to those of average intelligence who reciprocate by only pretending to follow them, thereby compounding the Pretension to the detriment of one and all.

Obviously, since the Message of I Paul is a Spirit Message and The Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in All is ultimately a Spirit Family, then its leaders are Spirit Guides, but, like Common Sense, there is also common sense which, like true Spirit Guides, is not so common as some would pretend.

Order in one’s life is a primary, personal

Responsibility involving Change wrought through honest and sincere self-discipline, better known as EFFORT. Order is an Action term and permanency through Action is what reaps “Results.”

Try to understand that the Seated Order of Thirteen must be an Order of Thirteen Highly Ordered and Orderly Persons, for it is an Order of Permanency, a One Time Calling and Seating, then, of Practicing Spirit Guides!

### **9. Preparation and 10. Recognition**

It’s simply impossible to have one without the other. The Seated Order of Thirteen obviously must be, and, therefore, will be, the most highly Prepared People of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT simply because they will display the Gifts of The Spirit Received as their personal witness to “Recognition” Sent and Received.

So, all of you, as candidates for the Order of Thirteen must Recognize that you Need to Give something in order to Receive something and, then, having Recognized this Truth, Exhibit same by Acting upon it in a Permanent Manner.

You cannot purchase the Gifts of LIFE, they come only by and through your Preparation and Recognition and strict adherence to the Way to “the Way.” Furthermore, it

is only through such Preparation and Recognition that one can Lead and Control others along the Path of their own Righteous Way of Following and being Controlled by the Mind of Christ via the very Freedom of one's own Volition.

### **11. Presence and 12. Dedication**

Here, again, one needs the other for both to be fully utilized in their life. All Spirit Guides have a great Responsibility regarding their Presence to their assigned Tasks, to their brother and sister Spirit Guides, to the Family and to the scattered strangers of this earth - always carrying the Message of I Paul wherever they are and regardless of what they are doing perfectly Remembering to Remember that Christ, the LIGHT comes First and foremost in their life and this attested to by their words, acts, and deeds, their Dedication, then, which includes such matters as devotion, desire, determination, and dependability. If one is not fully dedicated to their calling they are fooling no one and wasting everyone's time by their lack of a "Dedicated Presence," physically, mentally and spiritually. Only you can Do this and you can do it if you will but exercise your power of Volition and reap the Results of such an exercising.

### **13. Volition**

Although we have extensively covered this personal

power in Lesson Eleven, we need to say more about it here as one of our General Principles.

I am perpetually astonished by the sheer numbers of people who claim they are earnestly seeking the Kingdom of God and how few there are who honestly and sincerely Follow the Mind of Christ, the One simple and positive way of Finding the Kingdom of God, “Now” and “Then.”

Perhaps the reason for my astonishment lies in the fact that most people do not realize that there is no Greater Power in the entire Universe than the Mind of Christ, singular or collective, and the way to this power is through your very own Volition – the use of the Will that Wills above all wills, as your Will.

Our Future lies in the very things we create, and there is no greater Creator, nor source for creativity, than the Mind of Christ, which all of us have access to, but, sadly, so few of us Activate and Utilize Fully for the very purpose it was Gifted to us – the Well-Being of All.

Why it is so difficult for people to do this is beyond my comprehension for, in Truth, there is really nothing difficult involved. It is much easier and certainly more rewarding to Do the Good, the Right, and the True Things in this life than it is to do otherwise, and this can be proved by Doing it.

There is nothing “mysterious” about this power. What seems mysterious to most humans, at least, is how to Righteously use it and get the most out of it for the Well-Being of the most people possible. This explains why the Power comes only to those who Follow the Mind of Christ before, and who continue to strictly Follow after the Power Comes and who never knowingly abuse it nor use it only for their own personal well-being which, of course, is not its intended purpose. It’s an inclusive Power, not an exclusive one.

If we Christian Spiritualists are to make the Will that Wills above all wills, our will, then we need to strengthen and nourish our Volition to the very heights of perfection. We do this by dethroning “self” and enthroning Christ, the LIGHT, in our Whole Life, and in doing this, we commit ourselves to accepting the Whole Christ into our Life and that includes the Mind of Christ as our very own. This is what Christ First in your life means, and what Paul meant, when he said it was the Christ in him who lived, and what he meant when he said, but we have the Mind of Christ.

Was Paul able to Do all the things he did because he was a Spiritual Genius? No, he became a Spiritual Genius because of all the things he did. And he was able to Do all the things he did because Christ Came First in his whole

life. Because of this Love and his determined self-discipline, which added up to self-mastery, he held a Freedom of Obedience to the Mind of Christ which enabled him through his own constantly perfecting Volition to Control and Guide others along the Way to “the Way” as he himself walked it in all Righteousness.

I for one see nothing mysterious or magical in all this. It’s a simple matter of mind and Effort, and one any intelligent and dedicated person can follow if they so desire. It’s what the Message of I Paul has been attempting to Prepare everyone to Do – become a Spiritual Genius, a “Spirit Guide,” then.

Simply put, a Spiritual Genius is a Practicing Spirit Guide who Fully Embraces the Mind of Christ as his One and Only Will and Follows its dictates regardless of the circumstances or the outcome.

In closing this Lesson let me leave you with this food for thought: God is the cause of all good, right, and true things, but of some primarily, as of the Family and the Message, and of others by consequence, such as the Order of Thirteen. This training of humans by Spirit has been, therefore, a progressive education. So, it has been in all the earlier Orders. “Faith,” that is simple, Christian Spiritualism, is enough for salvation, but for those who add

to their faith “Knowledge,” have a higher possession. They are the True Christian Spiritualists. “To him who hath shall be given; to faith, knowledge; to knowledge, understanding; to understanding, love; to love, truth; and to truth, the inheritance of the Kingdom of God – the highest good “knowledge” can bring.”

You, the Candidates of the Order of Thirteen are accumulating this “knowledge” in your hands, put it where it belongs and lovingly use it and the Kingdom is yours.

In All Love,

Your brother,

I, Paul. S.G.

## **A Preface to Lesson #13 To The “Reader” of The Order of 13**

Lesson Thirteen is both a survey of and a course in True Christian Spiritualism. It presents a fairly extensive impression of what it is I, Paul wish to impress you with and an inclusive appreciation of what it is We wish you to appreciate, and, which at the same time includes and provides ample enrichment for your very Well-Being.

It (Lesson Thirteen) is not designed to lull you into the nocturnal but to wake you up to the Full Realization of the Life you are and of the Life within you, around you, above and below you, and that that does exist to your left and to your right. It is not a Lesson in Chaos but rather an insight of Chaos and the chaos you are. It is, furthermore, a Way Out of the Chaos, or, in your place, the Chaos we call and know as LIFE! And, therefore, the Way In.

If, properly listened to, this course in the intricacies of Chaos can provide breadth as well as a Surprising degree of depth as again, well of height, and, at the same time, meet the vital needs of each and every individual to assist them in their quest for “One-Pointedness,” and, therefore, the Way Out.

The Call to Prepare, Follow, Come comes from the

Chaos and is the Way to the Way Out of and back into the Chaos, “the forest.”

Having said this and having realized Nobody except No Thing understands it, let us get on with our own Chaos and “see” if we can get to “Chaos”! without acting Chaotic and move To Ward “The Chaos”!

The Universal Plan of, or, the Perfect Plan of LIFE is Abundance and in Abundance there is always Chaos simply because Chaos and Plan are Actions and therefore embody Change – Constant Change within the System that Always Prevails and where the Laws Remain Constant.

So, we bid you Peace, Individually and Collectively.

## **An Issue**

Lesson 13 for the Order of Thirteen is a “showcase” communication proving that the truth lies in many places, visible and alive, all over the Universe and in and on this earth and in many, many minds of the people of this earth and beautifully expressed in their spoken and written words. Much credit for Lesson 13 to the Order of Thirteen needs be given to the following:

I, Paul. West-303 – SGMASS<sup>2</sup> to the LIGHT of LIFE

Sir Alfred Lord Tennyson

Karl Marx

Sir Arthur Conan Doyle

Rudyard Kipling

Barrows Dunham

Hans Kung

Carl Jung

John G. Gunnel (for the book “Silent Music”)

William Johnston

---

<sup>2</sup> Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave

James Churchward

James Joyce

Frank Channing Haddock

Jane Ellen Harrison

Dermot A. Lane

G.R.S. Meade

Wade H. Boggs, Jr.

Charles Guignebert

Jesus of Nazareth

Saul of Tarsus

Aclecius of Tarsus

Appolinias of Tyana

Barnabas of Cicilia

Theodore of Tuscan

Alfred – the House of Urbane

MU – South-303, King Antarctica

Moore – King of Ireland

Sapatia – North-303

Vestura – East-303

Ghandi of India

There are others too numerous to mention but our  
love and gratitude go out to All, wherever they are.

Your Servant,

I, Paul.

Copies please to the Order of 13

JN – Dh – DH – I, Paul

Original to John Adam, Historian, 13

## Lesson #13

The “Seeing” and “Hearing” of a Practicing Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave of the LIGHT Seated in The Order of Thirteen – the tasks and the Problems.

Greetings to you my dear Fellow Spirit Guides, you of The Order of Thirteen. It is my task now to turn you, The 13, into Practicing Spirit Guides so let us together get with it.

You now have six letters and twelve lessons plus two presentations. You also have Secrets of the Minds, I, II, and III. I do not expect you to have fully digested all of these for some months to come. In addition, you have been given three books to read and hopefully you will have been better off for having read them – yet, we have only scratched the surface of all the things you need to know and do. I will get these matters that do matter into your hands as quickly as possible but you need to keep in mind now that I have three very important and pressing tasks to perform:

1. Receive the Message of I Paul
2. Compose The Order of Thirteen material and then teach it.
3. Write “the Book” for the People of this Earth.

Obviously, that does not leave me much time for myself, for resting or for holding “sittings.” I will do my best to accommodate all of my tasks fairly and squarely. I expect you, as Spirit Guides, to do the same.

The “seeing” and “hearing” of a Practicing Spirit Guide comes with the use of the Inner Eye – the “eye” of the heart, of love, of wisdom, and of volition – the collectiveness of the Mind of Christ and the Conscience then, which when properly utilized add up to Power, Force and Energy – matters that do matter then and matters not to be taken or treated lightly and matters that neither you nor I must ever be caught playing games with. We will play no games! And in order to ensure ourselves that we do not, we each have the obligation and responsibility to get out of “self” and stay out of “self” – Period. When you are out of “self” all distortions of the mind disappear, dissolve, vanish.

All of you are in the process of Change whether you recognize it or not – Jesse does as do I, Paul. Your task right now is not to impede that Change – Let it happen! Flow and Grow with it and, if possible, assist it. Results are being beamed in your directions – allow them to settle in. Try to recognize them – discern them – welcome them. Some of these results are swift and some slow in materializing so

do not get up-tight if you fail to “see” them at once. Patience is still a watchword for all Spirituals and a must for All Spirit Guides. Yet if you feel something stirring around inside you seek it out – do something positive – go do something bold – dare go where others fear to go – that’s what a Practicing Spirit Guide Does!

Now we have mentioned to you some facts about the “Inner Eye.” It’s a symbolic term with esoteric connotations. It is composed of four distinct parts which constitute its Oneness:

1. The inner eye of the heart = mind.
2. The inner eye of the Love = True Love.
3. The inner eye of the Wisdom = Knowledge-Understanding.
4. The inner eye of the Volition = The Use of The Will (the Activated Mind of Christ as explained in Lessons 11 and 12 to The 13 and by the Message proper).

So, when we speak and write about the Inner Eye, we mean all Four of the above unless we specify one separately to make a particular point. The Inner Eye is involved in many things and in many matters that do matter – such things as Healing, Prophecy, Meditation, Cogitation,

Contemplation, OBE's, Transcendences and so forth. The Inner Eye is a key to Peace of Mind, Uniting the Opposites, an Ease of Mind and Freedom from dis-ease and other related matters that do matter such as an Abundance of Life and a Freedom from Lack of any ilk.

As I, Paul have stated I want all of you to be privy to all I know and to do this I need to give you some history and some historical facts about mysteries and mysticism from the early times of such matters as they surfaced here on W-303. I will cover such matters as mysticism, the cults and sects of various groups and the occult as well as Christianity - both the religious and the Spiritual and I will also have some things to say about Buddhism.

To me True Mysticism can be best described in terms all of you will easily understand: Mysticism is "Cosmic Consciousness." I could say it is Divine Consciousness or Universal Consciousness or God Consciousness but each of these leave open too much room for argument where "Cosmic Consciousness" leaves little room for argument from anyone simply because "Cosmic Consciousness" is known only to those who have truly transcended to one or more of "the Houses" of the first five Pillars of LIFE, i.e., Faith, Hope, Love, Truth, or Wisdom.

Historically, the word mysticism is associated with the

mystery religions of this earth or its mystery cults and sects which were most predominant in the Greco-Roman world in the early Christian era - yet many “mystery” cults and sects flourished since the times of the Sumerians. The better known historically, Eleusinian, Dionysian and Orphic mysteries attained to great popularity, attracting thousands of people hungry for some spiritual outlet for their pent-up emotions and frustrations and fears. The three mystery religions cited above attracted the masses via their esoteric rites and ceremonies and the promises inherent in them. In those days the mystic (mistes) was the initiate who in an oath of secrecy swore to silence, literally, to keep his mouth shut (munein) about the inner-workings of his new found religion, and make no mistake about it, all of these religions were Dictatorships just as are all of the religions today. In those religions then, mysticism then, is associated with mystery, secrecy and the occult.

The word mysticism (like much of the terminology of the mysteries) passed into neo-platonism where it was associated with secrecy of another kind. Now it meant deliberately shutting the eyes to all external things, a practice which was central to neo-platonic meditation, one excluded the world in order to rise up to the One and to be Alone with the Alone. The neo-platonists, Plotinus and

Procleus, use the word muo of the closed eyes of one who is rapt in profound contemplation. While the eyes of the body were closed, the inner eye was open and searching for wisdom.

The word mystica was introduced into Christianity by an anonymous Syrian monk, a neo-platonist of the late fifth century A.D. who composed several theological treatises, one of which was named Mystica Theologia. To most of his writings he affixed the name of Dionysius the Areopagite who is mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles (a common practice of those times - witness the signing of the gospels) as a convert of Paul - and the Mystica Theologia he fictitiously addressed to Paul's disciple Timothy (while Paul was in Athens some men joined him and believed in his gospel, among them Dionysius the Areopagite and a woman named Damaris and others with them. About this, the real Dionysius, little is known except the text of Acts 17:34. A tradition has him as the first bishop of Athens. This is not true.).

Though little appreciated at first, the works of the so-called Dionysius raced through the intellectual world of Europe after they were translated into Latin by John Scotus Eriugena, in the 9th century A.D. Initially some doubts were cast on their authenticity, but the "pious fraud," as

Aldous Huxley called it, turned out so successful that Albert, Aquinas, Bonaventure and the school men greeted the author with the enthusiasm and reverence due to one who was close to Paul and his gospel. Commentaries on his works multiplied and even Dante sings the praises of the Areopagite. Only at the end of the 19th century was the identity, or the lack of identity, of this anonymous monk definitively uncovered. He is now frequently called pseudo-Dionysius.

While the prestige of Dionysius was greatly enhanced by his supposed proximity to Paul, he was also highly regarded because his works were of value – he had a message, he had Something to say that made sense. Moreover, he must have been deeply contemplative and his Mystica Theologia was a real contribution to Spiritual Thinking.

It opens with a passage which is important not only for the understanding of Dionysius' thoughts but for the understanding of religious mysticism as well as some insight into his own brand of mysticism and of the cultures of his time. He describes how the mind ascends to supra-conceptuality and interior silence by transcending all images and thoughts, thus entering the darkness. The author, supposedly talking to Timothy writes as follows:

Do thou, then, in the intent practice of mystic contemplation, leave behind the senses and the operations of the intellect and all things that the senses of the intellect can perceive, and all things that are not and which are and strain upwards in unknowing, as far as may be, towards the union with him who is above all things and knowledge for by unceasing and absolute withdrawal from thyself and all things in purity, abandoning all and set free from all, thou shalt be borne up to the ray of divine darkness that surpasseth all being (mystica theologia) (1:1).

As can be seen, for the author the word mysticism retains its meaning of secrecy of the mind which, possessing no clear-cut thoughts or images, remains in obscurity and darkness. A similar state of consciousness is found in Buddhism and in the mysticism of every cult and sect the world over, even when the theistic background of Dionysius is lacking. Many Buddhist texts inveigh against concepts as deadly enemies of the great goal which is enlightenment.

For Dionysius, however, concepts are not deadly enemies. He accepts the validity of a theology of affirmation or, in Greek, kataphatic theology, whereby one uses concepts to affirm truths about God. Albeit this knowledge is a poor thing and most imperfect compared

with the knowledge which is found by denying concepts and going to God by unknowing – this is the theology of Negation or Apophatic theology (Greek). It is precisely here that one finds the most sublime knowledge. Moreover, this knowledge, the author claims, is scripturally based; and he appeals to the example of Moses, who climbs the mountain and enters into the cloud of darkness. Moses cannot see God – “You cannot see my face, for men shall not see me and live” (Exodus 33:20) – but he Knows God by unknowing; he Knows God in darkness. He Knows with the inner eye.

This insight is of some great importance for those who wish to get a grasp on what mysticism is all about. Mysticism is non-discursive when one stays in the body – it is not a question of thinking and reasoning and logic, but of transcending Thinking and entering into what we would call an Altered State of Consciousness. Here one is in darkness, in emptiness, in the cloud of unknowing precisely because one does not know through clear images and thoughts nor with the eyes of the physical body. There should be a great inner silence, but it is a rich silence – the silence of one hand clapping. There is conceptual darkness but the inner eye is flooded with Light.

The collective Inner Eye is the motivator and driving

force behind all mystical journeys, in or out of the body, it is this inner eye that leads one beyond thoughts and images and concepts into the realms of Silence.

Mystical theology is experimental knowledge of God through the heart, the love, the wisdom, and the volition united as the Inner Eye and its raising up and spreading out through the Cosmos in an attempt to penetrate into what we have cited as Cosmic Consciousness which is actually the Uniting of our own divine Consciousness with Divine Consciousness.

Mysticism is the search for Wisdom and Knowledge and Understanding through the mediums of True Love and the Unity of the Minds.

We Christian Spirituals who have successfully penetrated the darkness to walk in the Light know that it was our Preparation and our Meditations, Cogitations, Contemplations, and True Prayer that got us there - our Inner Eye was activated because we followed in great Obedience to the Mind of Christ via the Conscience. We did not get there and safely back because we were moral or ethical or concerned about what we would eat or drink or wear on our back - none of these matters are matters that count or matter. Proof? I have personally transcended while I was what you would call less than sober! I, Paul, of

course, do not recommend that any of you attempt this until you are as Fully Prepared as I am and able to alter your state of Consciousness by the blinking of your Eye! I can receive in or out of this world and in any physical state whatsoever but none of you should even think about trying to Follow me until you are perfectly out of “self,” in total control of your own mind, and absolutely Fearless and a True Follower of the Mind of Christ, where you put Christ first in your life, and your self-love is pure enough to place yourself last in all things that Do Matter! Inferior to no person, place, or thing, and to no absolute. Superior to no thing, no person, no ideal, no goal, and no dream of dreams. Always Present, Always giving of yourself to those who Need you. Always Sharing and Caring for your loved ones and those even you may not love at the moment. You rid yourself of “likes and dislikes” and you will wonder, but only for a moment, where the anger, the hate, the frustration, the anxiety, and the bigotry disappeared to – it’s a major step towards becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual in the NOW.

The easiest and quickest way to become a True Christian Spiritual is to first Be Yourself and from that honest and sincere being give that being to Christ in All Love and in All Truth and watch the Changes that will be wrought and glory and grow in the ensuing Results of such

an Act. Whether you can “see” it or not I, Paul, have, in many ways, just given you a pretty good discernment of Lesson #1, to The Order of The 13.

Cosmic Consciousness or mysticism involves everything that the Supreme Spirit IS and you and I, Paul are. Think on that awhile, it involves quite a lot (Incidentally that is also the Foundation Square of all of my “sitting sessions”).

Now I am going to throw you a curve. Subliminally, i.e., below the threshold of aware, alert Consciousness, you store things going on around you that you are not immediately aware of, being conscious then of only what you are actually concentrating on – this subliminal content constitutes a large part of your education, your beliefs, your attitudes and your emotions, all collected by the Inner Ear! We will have more to say about this as we progress with our Secrets of the Mind series.

Mysticism to a Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave to the LIGHT of LIFE is based upon the True-Self, the indwelling spirit, the “divinization” of man-woman – so when I, Paul, speaks of mysticism what I am really saying is “True Spiritualism”! And in “True Spiritualism” there is absolutely nothing religious, nothing magical, nothing theological in the religious

sense, nothing speculative, nothing supposed, nothing illusionary, nothing accidental, nothing evil, nothing negative, nothing miraculous, nothing unseen, and nothing left undone in either Involution or Evolution.

In some mystical circles the Inner Eye is called the “Third Eye” and the Inner Ear the “Third Ear.” Both, of course, invisible but capable of being “seen.” The “Third Eye” is a clairvoyant faculty on the lower plane which, when perfected and allowed to, precedes physical sight. The same applies to the “third ear.” The Message alluded to these wherein it said we could “see” with our ears and “hear” with our eyes – both the physical and the Inner ones! For a person with my limited eyesight these truths have been a God-send to me. As the physical eye sees from natural light the Inner Eye sees from Spiritual Light and as the physical ear hears from natural sound the Inner Ear hears from Spiritual Silence – Keep the Watch and “see,” be still and “hear” or let them who have eyes see and ears hear. Esoterically they all mean the same thing.

“True Spiritualism,” then, being based upon the indwelling spirit, i.e., our True-Self, the Indwelling Spirit of LIGHT and, Yes, of LIFE, which is Omnipresent, and the Mind of Christ, i.e., the Will of God, and therefore the divinity of man and woman – male and female, then, is

what true mysticism is all about. The Spirit, which is Love and Truth, among other things, gives the gift of wisdom and power, the LIGHT Spirit, then, which is the special characteristic of True Mysticism. But the Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave possesses innately not only wisdom and power but the actual innate potential of other gifts as well which we can express thusly:

And the Spirit of the Supreme One shall rest upon them,

The Spirit of Wisdom and Power and Understanding shall be theirs,

The Spirit of Counsel and might,

The Spirit of Knowledge and the Love of the Almighty One

And their delight shall be in the Love of the Lord and they shall not want.

In this way the Spirit and the spirits are the keys to the Full Understanding of True Spiritualism or Spiritual Mysticism.

To me, Spiritual Mysticism is to walk through the Fires and emerge whole and unscarred.

Mysticism, True Spiritualism, is a Love and Truth

affair, a personal relationship with Spirit – an intimate affair, if you will. The Spirit of LIGHT is what keeps me out of the shadows and the Darkness. I live, but it is not I who lives but the spirit within me! So, I live two lives simultaneously – one physical, one spiritual, and my on-going struggle is to Unite them and Live as One, combining the Life of meditation, cogitation, contemplation, true prayer, receiving with the Life of Action, Freedom, Sharing and Caring. To be Fully Human and Fully Spiritual in the NOW, ever present, ever loving, ever receiving the Truth and sending it out to All in All with much Love, much energy, much concern.

The Inner Eye gazes not only on divine realities but also on human realities – it sees the divine in humans, it sees the LIGHT, it sees LIFE everywhere, and it drives me into Action.

I love the members of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in ALL for who and what they are, yet I also love them because I know I cannot find LIFE and LIGHT apart from them! This is why being Present, doing my assigned tasks, really Sharing, Caring, Loving, and delighting in and with them is so important to me. There is a tremendous Responsibility in being a Spirit Guide and even though I could not tie a shoe of a Jesus or a Paul, I try, I truly try.

And that trying has brought me uncountable Results.

To hold supra-conceptual knowledge is a high privilege and it comes about through love. It is a profoundly incarnationally and transcendable mysticism wherein the Inner Eye and Ear perceive the LIGHT within the bodies of all of mankind and sees LIFE in the eyes of one and all, here, there, everywhere. This is mysticism, True Spiritualism, then, in Action and Free of any and all compromise of its strict tenets. It is extremely demanding and few there are willing to heed its calling, to abide with the Spirits and to follow their guidance and enlightenments.

“Blessed are those who dare dream Dreams and are willing to Pay the Price to make them Come True.”

True Spiritualism for a Spirit Guide is to live one's life in Action literally vibrating vigorously from the very Presence of the Cosmic Consciousness of the LIGHT. [My dear “JN” often upon touching my bare arm jumps from this very vibration of my body that I speak of.] As I have said before, you really don't know me all that well. But you of The 13 will, oh yes you will. I can see now the inherent mysticism in every one of you and I “see” you being moved by Spirit. Have Patience – greater things are to Come your Way! Just be honest and Responsible. Have Order and

discipline in your life but have love and joy and happiness and love life, all life, as a good practicing Spirit Guide must DO.

You are not now as Spirit Guides asked for blind following of a set of rules and regulations other than the thirteen given in The Order of Thirteen. You now have the obligation to Follow the inner laws of Spirit, of Charity and Love. You must now listen more to the indwelling spirit than to anyone else. But you cannot hear this spirit if you insist on holding onto “self” and that’s all that stands between you and a “safe” transcendence. You have every single thing you need in your possession right now to accomplish this –the one barrier is “self.” Get rid of it.

Once I told you that now I can meditate anytime and anywhere, even, I said, in the middle of a battlefield with a battle going on. How could this be possible? Simply because after a long period of self-acquired meditation, cogitation, contemplation, I was lifted up beyond this self-acquired practice into “infused” Meditation, Cogitation, and Contemplation. Infused then is to answer a call to do so. It’s how I transcend as well. And it’s how I receive. The call may come at any given moment with no advanced warning or with advance warning, one really never knows what to expect next. It’s exciting and it’s invigorating and

it's a pleasure to Keep the Watch.

The phenomena of these “callings” are many and varied. They include visions, lucid dreams (no longer for me), Revelations, trances, “hearings” and “seeings,” psychic powers, prophecies, telepathy, corrections, clairvoyance, and so forth. All given instructionally for my own enlightenment and now for yours, you of The 13. And as you can probably quickly discern, we have much, very much to lay upon you ahead of us. So, hang in there for I fully intend to see that you receive it all per my promise. What I cannot promise you is your inner-peace, your joy, your love, your happiness, those are matters that you need work out between you and your spirit and the Spirits of LIFE and LIGHT. I can tell you though, that if you will embrace and follow faithfully the Mind of Christ such matters are yours and automatically so. Just Love, don't Fear, be Patient and Righteous, just and Free. Doing these things will bring you Results beyond your wildest imaginings.

Mysticism, True Spiritualism, i.e., Cosmic Consciousness, then, comes in an infinite variety of ways and may express itself through you in a most unusual and very surprising way or manner. You must Keep the Watch, you must allow Change to take place, you should not

repress different feelings that you would consider other than the usual or norm. Of course, if they're wrong or bad, repress them, get rid of them – it's certainly not Cosmic Consciousness, it's "self." Go back to the CPM's and study "Abandoning" and "Surrender" – they can now be very helpful to you Spirit Guides.

Now I would like you to know just what Christian Spiritualism really IS. "It is a movement of human multitudes in struggle searching for the Truth and the Love Inherent in it. It is a Movement of Change, of Peace and in Search of Answers to the problems that beset This Earth of Ours and its inhabitants. Most of all it's a Family, a Friendship, and a Fellowship of equals, dedicated to LIFE and LIGHT and Servants to the Happening of the All in All. It's an inclusive movement and dedicated to Sharing and Caring with one and all in a loving and unselfish manner all that we possess spiritually and physically."

I have purposely made that definition very simple in view of the following which is not quite as simple:

Since the close of the Second World War people around my age have called our Age an Age of Freedom. Yet Freedom, under her incubus of armaments, policing wars, religious wars, territorial ambitions smugly disguised as protectionism, patriotism, superstitions, conventions of

every sort, is of such stunted proportions in her so-called time, that the human race is likely to be extinct before Freedom arises and arrives at its maturity.

We who struggle to bring about the New Age, the Spiritual Age, are faced with many obstacles. Yet if we, the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in All, can pull it off, then the Spiritual Age by its very existence is also the Age of Freedom that most humans desire in their hearts and minds. Where the Spirit is, so too is Freedom.

It is evident in our world today that we have, immediately before us and pressing down hard upon us, a problem greater than any this communication can adequately describe. Intellectual tolerance is no doubt essential to the sane conduct of human affairs, but the survival of mankind is essential to any conduct of human affairs whatever. Unless our off-spring live on in their multitudes, there will have come either an end to all things human or an odious life, unknown even to our most primitive ancestors, in which a few degenerated hunters stalk radioactive game. In either event there would not be capitalism or socialism nor religionism or feudalism or any other of the systems wherein men and women have contrived to live, not very peaceably, with one another.

Yet in “defense” of two of these systems, Socialism

and Capitalism, their leaderships now invoke a force capable of destroying all. If I understand correctly what the leaders of the capitalistic system say and what the leaders of the socialistic system say, amid the repeated pieties of organization talk, there are circumstances, entirely possible, in which the one system would conduct nuclear warfare against the other, with the certainty both would be destroyed. In that event, we should all die, allegedly on behalf of assertions by Marx or by Jefferson, neither of whom had any such intentions at all. What survivor, treading the blackened crust of Earth, would then meditate those ghastly inferences, so helpless in logic, and so fatal in effect, which the pursuit of happiness and the withering away of the state had been deemed to require?

To the strife of social systems, we must also add the strife of nations. Nationhood now has a history of over five hundred years. Because those years were filled alternately with warfare and construction nationhood has come to be the mode in which men and women are more passionately organized. Nineteenth century socialists, to be sure, were more hopefully international, and Marx in the Manifesto (an international work and therefore hyperbolic amid its science) expressed a belief that “the working man has no country” (he also said that religion was the opium of the masses). It has turned out, in the years since, that, whether

or not the working men and women have had a country, they have generally thought they had, and have thought also that their country was the one they worked in.

Nationalism split the socialist movement during the First World War, and the socialist states that have arisen since the Second World War appear to feel their nationalism as strongly as their Socialism.

Thus, in our world there are three sorts of conflict - Capitalism, Socialism, and Religionism. Two of them, Capitalism and Socialism have, throughout the past tended to proceed amid conflicts of all sorts. That is to say whenever those conflicts reached a critical stage, the contending parties attempted a settlement by all the violence they could command. But all the violence which now can be commanded is more than enough to extinguish life on this Earth of ours. Our difficulty is, therefore, that we live amidst conflicts which, if they proceed as they always have proceeded, will surely be our doom. It is rational to Hope, however, that they will not proceed as in the past, it is even rational to believe that they will not. Yet we must not allow our hope or our belief to lull us into inaction or apathy.

This belief and its rationality have philosophical grounds which show that predictions about the future

generally rest upon an expectation that the future will rest upon the past. If, now, we inquire what reason there is for expecting the future to resemble the past, the sole answer appears to be that the past futures have regularly done so. In such an argument, however, the conclusion has been used to prove itself, and into this sad state the inference subsides.

We have, therefore, no necessitarian ground for expecting events to repeat themselves, and perhaps all such expectations is a matter not of logic but of habit. The genuine fact seems, however, rather stronger than this. It is fair to say that, in our experience of past futures and past pasts, very many events in those futures turned out to be quite different from anything previously known. Our present peril of nuclear annihilation is itself a striking example of novelty, of a circumstance which has never before existed and which in most previous ages could not even have been conceived.

If, a hundred years ago, it would have been erroneous to predict that men would learn to control atomic energy, it may well be erroneous now to predict that men will never learn to limit the severity of their struggles. Possibly they will fail to learn, or learning, fail to limit. But none of this is fated. Our political choices, though strongly influenced

by appetite and social structure are yet in some measure spontaneous and free. We can preserve our race, vessel-physical, if we wish to, despite the fact that governments use their populations like flails to smite one another and smite the world.

Perhaps we may say, in broadest terms, that what endangers mankind here is the unevenness of its own development. Our knowledge of physical nature is extensive and our use of that knowledge is spectacular. Our knowledge of spiritual-psychical nature is practically nil and our use of that knowledge is practically non-existent. We have also allowed ourselves to know rather less about society and human nature - subjects which are always liable to propagandist distortion. Yet after the labors of Freud and Marx, we can no longer profess ignorance. Essential knowledge of society and of human nature now exists, and obviously exists. What we have thus far not shown is sufficient willingness to use this knowledge for the general good.

During thousands of years organizations have developed habits for dealing with one another. Those habits are now largely out of date, as belonging to a pre-nuclear age. They constrict improvement, and they may indeed be the death of us all, and the end of Life here on W-

303. Habits, of course, are difficult to shed - and politicians, terrorists, long hardened to the use of violence in all its forms, including religious turmoil, do not readily perceive how little is the good violence can now confer. Yet in the play of circumstance, habits are always getting broken and replaced. It is very usual for an advance of knowledge in one area to produce advance in others. Our descendants in the next century, if we allow them to live, to exist, will probably possess a psychology, a sociology and a spiritualism equal to or surpassing their physics, together with a Rational use of all.

Those will be happy times; the great perils having passed. Meanwhile, short of that felicity, though not indeed remote from it, we may ponder the means of approach. More particularly, we may ask whether this present journey through the politics of philosophical thought gives useful information as to what we may expect or ought to do. I think it does. The information is of two sorts: one which concerns the whole development of thought, and one which concerns the behavior of all organizations.

It is, of course, not easy to generalize about the history of philosophy. The tumultuous sea, where wave has clashed with wave, bears on its surface no clear pattern. It

has had, however, a direction and a tide. From its origins into our own times philosophy has been a struggle about a poem - a poem which celebrated things imaginary as opposed to things real. The beginning of the greatest story ever sold. Everything the masses "know" about God or LIFE is imaginary and/or manufactured by man here on W-303 and nowhere else to suit his mind, his feelings, and his egotistical vanity. This poem has included all the mythologies, cults, religions, sects, denominations, schisms, and transcendental philosophies of men, for these all have the common trait of employing figurative speech and not literal, and of ignoring factual history and also of employing "manufactured truths" and of twisting half-truths and untruths into "supposed truths" via repetitive actions via oral exhortations and the written word and metaphysical magic.

The poem's purpose has been to present as real a great many things that were not real, thus to compensate for inadequacies in human beings, in social arrangements, and in their relations with the Physical World. Thus, man's old weakness before the strength of Nature could be repaid by an Allegory to the effect that nature was under the control of a power, or better, powers, friendly or at any rate willing to be propitiated. His rebelliousness could be suppressed by joining governmental authority with divine authority, and

his conscience made firm by worship of supernatural personages who embodied moral ideals.

The poem was reworked in various forms. I, Paul have studied the translated Greek and Egyptian forms and have studied the Christian version quite extensively. For a long time, the poem was for the most part not recognized as poetry. Only a few materialists like Epicurus and the Ionians were able to set it aside in favor of science. Yet it was always probable that, sooner or later, philosophers would be driven out of metaphor into literal language, and out of wishful dreams and into an exact survey of the actual world they lived in. This event happened as we know it in the 16th century A.D. when the European society came under the leadership of commercial magnates whose prime need was to describe the physical world without error and without imagery.

Until this moment philosophy had been struggling to incorporate the poem into something like science, as a scientific account of the world, actually (for example, the Church insisted that this Earth was the center of the Universe and that everything in space revolved around it – many were burned at the stake for expressing contrary views). After this moment, philosophy tried to expel the poem, to make everyone see that the poem was just a poem

and no more. There would have been not much greater difficulty in this than there is in a classroom exegesis, except for the fact that the poem had settled into the ideologies of certain organizations which defended by force its erroneous pretensions to science. There followed at last the Kantian truce between science and theology, which, though strongly hinting at, that the poem was only a poem, allowed people to take it literally if they wished, the truce really came down to the point wherein the theologians would not write science and the scientists would not write theology (facts remained facts and traditions remained tradition).

Astounding results have followed this separation of poetry from science. (You are all probably very curious by now just what in hell poem I am talking about – Patience my dear Fellow Spirit Guides, Patience!) The human race has rapidly acquired the powers, if not the dignity, it once ascribed to the gods. Almost every hope which the old poem sang so beautifully is now attainable by human ingenuity – an ingenuity that began to grow in skill and power the moment the poem was recognized to be such. Science has come, if not with the intent, then at any rate with the means, that we may have life and have it more abundantly. We now at least have a way to feed and clothe and house the entire population of the world if we would

put our minds, our hearts, our love and our Volitions into it and forget, momentarily, our damn greed and selfishness and materialistic ways. And although science has liberated our race from many diseases much needs be done in many areas of medicine and medical research just to remain close to being even. It's as great a matter of mammon as it is discoveries and basic education of our future scientists in these related fields. Indeed, as medical science advances we are pushing toward a sort of physical immortality and this corruptible puts on incorruption in a mode more earthly than Paul's.

Even our darkness shows forth the same strength. Two men, mere human beings, have the power to extinguish all life and bring an end to our history here on W-303. They thus possess an attribute once exclusively ascribed to deity! And if you know anything about the history of this world you would readily realize that it was the religions that got us into this damn mess. These two men are level now with Zeus, Jahweh, Moloch, and Baal. One cannot tell which of these they most resemble, and in that doubt lies most of the anguish of the age. Yet it seems that, if our Earth remains habitable, the lowly will in time inherit it. In the resolution of this choice between democracy and oblivion it will be decided which side the gods are on.

If abandonment thus gave remarkable power to men and women, it also gave remarkable confusion. So soon as those metaphors were seen to be metaphors, it was plain that a literal description lay somewhere else. But where? The search became what it has not ceased to be, a scramble. During the 19th Century and the 20th, philosophies multiplied. They were all concerned with the awesome touch of science on human affairs. If they could not (as indeed they could not) abate its pressure they could at least try to describe the extent of the pressure itself.

How various the views began to be may be seen, rather comically, in Pius IX's Syllabus Errorum of 1864. The document undertook to outlaw all notions then current which declined to read the old metaphors as the Roman Church required. The notions thus pronounced heretical were placed under ten headings, but to no avail. Classification could not organize their infinite variety. They had little logical relation among themselves, and were united chiefly in what they were against. Yet from even so much dis-union orthodoxy had nothing to hope. Philosophers had become explorers of new places and could not and would not listen to orders from home.

Many the theories - many the schools. All sorts of Hegelianisms - right, center, left, all sorts of idealisms,

Hegel's being only one – all sorts of Realisms – the Naive – the Cambridge, the Critical and the new Vitalisms versus mechanisms, flame against steel. Pragmatisms so manifold, so anarchic that no pragmatist has yet defined the word – although the late professor Lovejoy convinced himself that such definitions existed and that the definitions numbered exactly Thirteen. Now, a multitude of choices gives a lively sense of freedom. Thus, liberation from orthodoxy was confirmed and extended by the abundancy itself of views that a person may hold with reason and even with good sense. Since all these views were intellectually reputable, if also conflicting, disagreement among philosophers became at first an expectation and at last something of a duty.

This swelter of thinking surged around many problems. Did one, for example, really know anything? If so, how did one know it, and how did one know he knew it? Did this knowledge refer to a world independent of the knower, or were the knower, the knowledge, and the world in some lofty transcendental sense identical with one another? Was change but the surface look of an immutable universe, or, if change was itself primordial, did it proceed with mechanical regularity or with shocks and explosions as in fireworks and in life? Was the universe friendly to human hopes, or indifferent to them, or conspiratorially

bent on their defeat? Was man-woman Animal or Angel? – Mortal or Immortal? And could a man or woman make up their own mind, or did their genes and their environment do that for them?

All these problems, it is clear, are quite genuine, and will long be with this world unless the Spiritual Age becomes a Reality and the New Worlds the New Hope of the masses. Every mistake suggests the problem of knowledge, every difficult choice, the problem of fate. An age that has seen vast man-made horrors cannot avoid pondering human nature and history and each individual person, solitary amid tremendous forces, must ask, what chance there is that things in the end will go well. All previous expectations – the reasoned, accumulated guesses of a century – are now in doubt – for if the issue of events is annihilation, our problems and their remedies will have disappeared.

One can understand how the Enlightenment broke philosophy into fragments. It is less obvious, however, why Western philosophers have remained so long content with the fragmentation. Probably every one of the diverse views has some contact with reality, and is to that extent true – a state of affairs that has invited much eclecticism. Yet every one of the diverse views is also visibly partial and

incomplete. For example, the Realists, in order to maintain that the universe exists independently of being known reduced scientific activity to the dimension of a search light, and thus could give no account of scientific activity itself. Their rivals, the Idealists, intent on showing that thinking makes a difference caused the external to be swallowed up in some sort of “mind” – Gods, the Universes, or our own Determinists threw free will out altogether – Indeterminists abolished the reign of law. Eclectic philosophers, shopping around for views they could accept were limited in their choices by a love of bare consistency – whereas the main task is to see how opposites go together to make up the world, and yes, the Universe.

Why the extremism, each view defending itself so desperately against each other? (Kind of resembles the Christian Religionists, the schismatics, all claiming to have “the” truth) There must have been many reasons – Rebelliousness, Pride of personal commitment (“it’s my own ideal”), sectarian loyalties, the slam-bang competitiveness of commercial society, and the shrewd refusal of that society ever to formulate an ideology of their own. Yet I have the impression that this love of the fragment, this feeling that disagreement is somehow preferable to unanimity issues from the great wound the

Middle Ages left. The scholastic philosophers had differed among themselves, but they had differed only in their interpretations of one and the same world view, that of orthodox Christianity. These were lesser disagreements, but even so, perilous. The world view itself was enforced by police power. Within it, safety and comradeship - without, danger and loneliness. Rebels were bound to seek, and did in fact achieve, a state of affairs in which safety, diversity, and comradeship were all possible together.

Thus, philosophers of the past hundred years have, upon the whole, regarded intellectual systems with great distaste. They expect the Sciences to be systematic, but they expect philosophy to be fluid, sinuous, and even improvisational. They believe any Philosophical system to be in error just because it is a system. They believe, further, that it suffocates them with doctrine and sometimes with economic or political coercion. All such forms of threat reopen the old wound and so it bleeds afresh, men seek once more the healing power of diversity. If one visibly speaks for oneself, even though in error, one is at any rate not a mere organizational hack.

This love of personal spontaneity, this spirit of criticism and experiment, spread beyond science and philosophy into the Fine Arts. In painting, the

Impressionist movement, developing after 1870, studied the play of lights upon objects as that play occurs in nature rather than in the studio. (Why am I telling you all these things – any idea?) There followed analysis of the spatial constitution of objects, and at last, what we now have, the analysis of space as such. What began as an escape from “Orthodoxy” as the academies and salons described it or defined it has ended in an exhaustive (and perhaps exhausting) search through the possibilities of the medium. The other arts have been similarly searched – we now have the anti-novel, etc. There has never been in history so long and loud a shaking of all the media which used to house our masterpieces. Suddenly, after 1917, this foaming tide of experimental analysis began to encounter a series of rocks. The new socialist countries, as they arose, asserted for the arts two purposes which elsewhere had disappeared beneath experimentation: enjoyment by a large public, and commentary upon human affairs. These purposes, unexceptional in themselves, were natural enough in societies engaged upon resolving their inner conflicts and fitting themselves to produce abundance for all. Moreover, Revolutions tend to have, or to elaborate, extensive philosophies, and in Marxism the socialist world has a philosophy almost complete.

This sudden burst of homogeneity in thought and

culture has horrified the Western World intelligentsia as much as the fall of capitalism has horrified the Western bourgeoisie - and with somewhat more excuse. Philosophy and the arts do grow sterile in proportion as they cease to experiment and to criticize their services to mankind rest always upon an awareness of possibilities to be explored, discovered. Yet, remarkable to say, the philosophy that most accepts this fact is Marx's dialectical materialism. For the word "materialism" simply means that there's a world out there, and "dialectical" means that the world out there is Full of Change and Surprises, which have, however, an intelligible pattern.

This view, supposing it be generally acted upon, yields interesting results for the long contest between orthodoxy and heresy. If the world is more than an invention of our minds, if it has a discoverable nature of its own and in that nature has a shared novelty, then all descriptions of it are incomplete and subject to revision, not only because we may err about what is or what has been but also because what will be does not yet exist. Accordingly, there cannot be a body of doctrine which is at one and the same time Changeless and true! But orthodoxy, as we know, is the effort of organizations to keep doctrines Changeless or nearly so. It therefore is doomed to a loss of truth (and what it sells as truth), which is, in its turn a loss of contact

with Reality. In this manner, orthodoxy, imperils the very organizations it serves!

Many philosophies have protested against orthodoxy, but the two-fold doctrine of materialism and dialectics is, so far as I know, the only one which explains from its own basic assertions why orthodoxy (and by consequence, heresy) ought to cease. It may be that is the best and noblest of Marx's contribution to mankind here. This world is not ready to receive it, because sharpness in conflict begets dogmatism in organizations. Yet the contribution is there, set forth in quaint philosophical language of the 19th Century, to be seized when struggles are milder or even perhaps, while they run their present course. (Today, practically everywhere you look in our world, there stands a socialist) I think that any population which convincingly shows it can do quite nicely without orthodoxy in the midst of any and all conflicts could speedily win praise and emulation from all of mankind. Christian Spiritualism is farther away from orthodoxy than Marx ever dreamed about! And we haven't even engaged the enemy, Yet! Yes, Thirteen good men and women can wrought Change beyond the Thinking norms of this Earth's masses at the present moment but not even thirteen million can do it unless they are Fully Prepared!

Descartes showed the world that the scientific method rather than hierarchical status put men in possession of Truth, after the Enlightenment showed that science was a means of salvation for earthlings, there came to pass the circumstance which still prevails and grows - vast knowledge shared by very many men and women. This knowledge gets fragmented in the sharing, and is sharpened or dulled by those who have it. Moreover, its very vastness and complexity make the interrelations within it difficult to trace and right applications of it difficult to prepare. The organizing of knowledge, and the use of it in practice, have proved more baffling than even the Enlightenment supposed.

Consider, for example, the four theories which everybody nowadays regards as the intellectual foundation of our age: Darwinism, Marxism, Freudian psychology and Einsteinism physics. (Four very formidable opponents and enemies of True Christian Spiritualism.) All these laid bare, in their different ways, certain facts of importance for human destiny on this Earth. They are all accepted as advances in knowledge and therefore offsprings of the Enlightenment. Yet, severally and collectively, they show barriers as well as paths to understanding salvation of humanity here. But Science does not save quite as easily as had been hoped.

Each of the Theories, after its appearance, set off bursts of philosophical exaggerations, some very optimistic, some very pessimistic. It was held, for example, that biological evolution would produce the perfect man and perfect woman, that social evolution would produce the perfect society, that all problems would be solvable on the psychiatrist's couch. Pessimistically, it was held that human improvement must await biological changes, or that it must be attended with historical catastrophe, or that it can never quite triumph over oppressive egoism. These two sets of exaggeration devour each other. They share a common and concealed assumption, surely doubtful and probably false, that human behavior cannot control the forces which affect our karma. (The Message states this much more forcefully.)

Setting these exaggerations aside, we are still left perplexed in the midst of so much data. Darwin, I fancy will trouble us little. Einstein, however, has unsettled the old notion of causality on which all science seemed to depend, and has vastly increased our social problems by giving us access to atomic energy. And Marx and Freud? Well together they bring us toward the heart of the matter that does matter to man-woman, insofar as their life on this Earth is concerned. Events of the past fifty years seem to have confirmed Marx's belief that the "Contradictions of

Capitalism” would give rise to Socialism. Over a billion people are now socialist (and still counting) and they became so in order to solve certain problems which capitalism had set. The success of this prediction tends to strengthen other predictions of Marx. (Marx as a Prophet is terribly hard for orthodoxy to swallow.) He predicted that there can be a society of abundance and an end to coercive government. (Nowhere on this Earth can you find such today.) However, the continuing play of power politics after socialism leaves unresolved the Freudian doubt whether improved social relationships can discipline the aggressiveness of and in mankind here.

The opposition, so far as there is any, between Marx and Freud is an opposition between what we know about historical tendencies and what we know about personal motivations. We had better modify this knowledge by an awareness also of what we do not know. There is, of course, as yet no society of abundance in the Marxist sense, and consequently we cannot observe its effect upon human motivation. We simply do not know how people here will behave in that kind of society, and we cannot be absolutely sure that they will be able to create it. They may - They may not. Nothing of this sort is predetermined, apart from human activity and the Creative Thought and Creative Imagination gifted to men and women here on W-303,

Creativities independently utilized by each and every one of us. Being inclusively gifted they should be collectively utilized! We ourselves are even now determining the Future, not by knowing exactly what it will be but by conceiving what it can be, and then laboring for it. New, fresh, dynamic thought, can easily create a New World “if” it is properly disseminated. As the result of our labors, a great deal more will be known – a few years from now, about the effect of Christian Spiritualism upon men and women and of such men and women upon society.

Thus, it is by massive “Action” that we can give answers to the problems philosophy has set. These answers will generally be more rational in proportion as they are not coerced, and coercion, being an organizational affair, will diminish as there are fewer or less violent shocks among organizations and within them. At the present moment organizations are too small and too quarrelsome in many ways – indeed, they are quarrelsome because they are too small, and they will remain small because they are quarrelsome. They suppose among themselves (with some accuracy) all sorts of rivalries and contrary interests, and these they so far exaggerate that loyalty to the organization and its interests becomes the highest ethic of which the members are thought to be capable. It is now evident that this narrow parochial view

will do little more than provide high moral grounds for the destruction of mankind here.

Since organizations share the general wish for survival, perhaps they will act, or can be made to act, accordingly. I think there are already some signs of this - organizations are talking, politically and religiously, in some locations, even though they are still warring in others. There may develop a habit of solving problems short of annihilation and as practice strengthens this habit, we may pass, squawking, posturing and bullying into a future Peace and a New Age, and hopefully, it will be the Spiritual Age. The Rights of men and women were established in just this way. They are not less grand and valuable for all that. No doubt a sane society would grant Rights and Peace at once, but less sane societies, of which we have many, can be brought to grant them in the course of doing something else and Doing it well.

Coercion having fallen away, there would be left merely differences of opinion, and these would diminish as problems are solved. The love of diversity prospers when it serves a political or religious or "self" want, but no sane person cultivates disagreement on matters that are known.

We agree that there is an independent external world, but from that point on disagreement sets in - men and

women here, just don't know enough yet. This is a reasonable and natural state of affairs – disagreement when knowledge is lacking – agreement when knowledge is possessed. It was the Enlightenment's hope that knowledge would unite mankind. I share that hope, though violent men and women abound and have knowledge which is perilous. It will be seen therefore, that I do not share the existentialist pessimism which advocates surrender before attempt. We know “our” Future to be certain – Yet, we also know our Future to be uncertain, but more than this we, as humans, we do not know. So, where nothing is certain, nothing is doomed, and accordingly we may explore with some confidence certain very attractive possibilities: An Abundant Life here, a Peaceful World, all blessings shared with one and all. If such tasks seem to you above our Powers, why so seemed the tasks of every age to the people of it. They grew, however, equal to their tasks – and so can we. While friends are warm, children are wonderful and grandchildren glorious, I do not, for a moment, think we can fail! For we are to become (it will be remembered) “lords and possessors of nature” – lords also and possessors of “Ourselves”!

Now before I, Paul proceeds I once again want to remind you all that all Order of Thirteen material is, for now, Secret and Restricted to The 13, Period!

The Message of I Paul has taken you on a long journey, going back, way back into Ancient Times and now up to the Present. Now we are going back almost two thousand years and we are going to tell you all a story that is true and the opposite of the “Poem” we have been talking about which is, of course, not true, but has been sold to millions of people for almost two thousand years who were not all ignorant but all gullible and gave their minds over to charlatans smarter than they were. But first we will give you a little background of the earlier history that led to some of the events that occurred between 30 and 33 A.D. and then the next phase which began in 36 A.D.

Some of this will sound familiar to those of you who have read the whole Message of I Paul to date and carried it with you.

– In Quest of The Kingdom of God –

(Seek ye first the Kingdom of God and all)

(these other things shall be given unto you)

Martyrs, as a famous etymology tells us, are “witnesses.” By sacrificing themselves, they instruct others. After this manner, Socrates may be said to have taught the value of personal integrity, of being loyal to one’s own best self (or best side). It is a lesson that

philosophers are peculiarly fitted, when they will, to teach.

Yet there are other kinds of martyrdom, and therefore other lessons, which display not so much what the martyr himself is as what he desires human society to be. It is a social ideal he is after, not a personal. He finds existing arrangements to be foolish or evil, and he proposes to change them in some significant way.

Such proposals arise whenever the will of a governing class collides with the will of a subject majority. Then the subjects begin to dream, to conjecture, and to plan - and possibly to Act. Their dreams, conjectures, plans, were all contrary to the reigning ideology - and their actions were of course schismatic, as aimed at breaking up and reconstituting the establishment. Thus, where societies are exploitive (i.e., societies in which one class appropriates, without full compensation, economic values created by another) social ideals will be more or less heretical, and troubles must always attend the Kingdom of God, here. (It's simply the nature of man-woman on W-303 - not the Spirit.)

In respect of human attainment, the Kingdom of God has seemed to lie in the future, near or remote as the particular prophet foresees. Even if God is held to be reigning now, and to have reigned always, it is clear that

the perfections of God's Kingdom are not immediately accessible to all men and women. Rather we must work and hope in a probationary state, then perhaps – but only perhaps – we shall arrive.

Because of the multiple religions and their multiple denominations, the seat and style of the Kingdom are vague and getting vaguer. There is to be sure a religious sense that Kingdom (which ought by now to have become a democracy) somehow administers the moral affairs and directions of whole societies here, adjusting happiness to virtue and suffering to vice. But no one seems to know any longer what the rewards or punishments really are, or how administered, or to whom. Perhaps, for most societies, it is well. Men and women know little enough how to conduct affairs within their own societies and organizations.

The first users of the phrase “Kingdom of God” had, however, quite precise ideas. (I'm speaking of religionists herein and not Spirituals.) The Kingdom was to have a definite geographical site: Palestine. Its inhabitants were to be living men and women of identifiable nationality – namely Jewish – though the Kingdom may eventually include other groups as these decided to adhere. The Kingdom, in any event, was to be a harmonious society of men, righteous men at that (women were second class

persons at that time); and if there were classes in it, these would treat one another with all honesty and fair dealing. Historically, this concept served as the ideal of various movements for national liberation – movements which often failed, but until the year 135 A.D., never hopeless and never once destroyed completely.

The men who conceived this idea lived at the southwestern end of the “fertile crescent” – that storied arc of land which bounds the Arabian Desert and stretches from Egypt to the Persian Gulf. For long centuries this district was a footpath for the great predatory powers: Egypt, Assyria, Babylonia, Persia, Macedonia. Tribes, like the Hebrews who settled in the area and grew into kingdoms not only jostled one another but were likely to be swept aside by these monsters. The author of the book of Daniel, writing in the Second Century B.C. at the time of the Maccabean revolt against Antiochus IV describes a phenomenon which had been occurring for almost a thousand years:

The king (of the north) shall do as he pleases, he shall uplift himself and exalt himself above every god, uttering amazing vaunts against the God of gods, he shall prosper till the wrath divine runs its course – for his strong forts he shall procure soldiers who worship a foreign god; his

favorites shall he advance to high honor and make them rulers over the masses, selling land to them for a bribe. When the end arrives the king of the south shall butt at him, but the king of the north shall attack him like a whirlwind - He shall also invade the fair land of Palestine and myriads shall be killed - the land of Egypt shall not escape, but he shall lay hand on the treasures of gold and silver and all the valuables of Egypt, the Libyans and Ethiopians following in his train. Then rumors from the east and the north shall alarm him, till he retires in great fury to inflict doom and destruction on many, pitching his royal pavilion between the Mediterranean and the sacred hill so fair. So shall he come to his end, with none to help him. Daniel II - 36-45 events of the sort described had already happened to the Assyrians and the Babylonians and were then threatening the Seleucid dynasty.

We may note especially verse 39, which says - "his favorites he shall advance to high honor and make them rulers over the masses, selling land to them for a bribe." It is policy characteristic of big exploitive societies in their relations with small exploitive societies. The big control the small by confirming in the small society the power of its own ruling class. We shall see that this was the heart and essence of the Roman administration, but it had been going on a long time before that. Since a foreign power was

likely to rule you through your own rulers, it followed that national liberation required you to separate those rulers from their rule. National liberation involved social revolution.

The ancient Jews met and suffered every variation upon this basic theme. Sometimes their cities were occupied or laid waste, sometimes allowed to stand without fortification, sometimes (when the foreign potentate, like Artaxerxes needed border defense) refortified. Sometimes the people were led off into captivity – though the famous Babylonian one (and there is some great doubt it ever occurred) was by no means severe: at the most the “captives” were not enslaved, but were allowed to live and prosper as free citizens. Always, however, there was the incurable seditiousness of the ruling class, particularly of the priests. They corrupted reform after reform, until the outraged prophet Ezekiel began to regard Nebuchadnezzar’s destruction of Jerusalem (597 B.C.) as a good thing, as the only possible good thing. “You have played the harlot,” cried Ezekiel to Jerusalem, you have played the harlot with your neighbors, the sensual Egyptians – you have played the harlot with the Assyrians, so insatiable was your lust; and even then, you were not satisfied. You repeated your harlotry over and again with Chaldea, the trader’s land; but even that left

you unsatisfied. Ezekiel 16:26-29.

In the Judaic tradition, on the whole, the prophets are revolutionary and the priests are reactionary. The priests, ideological spokesmen for the governing class, were in daily administration both of public affairs and of private behavior. The prophets sprang from lower social ranks, especially from the peasantry and won leadership by the eloquence with which they proclaimed existing social facts and mandatory moral values. ("to prophesy" meant originally, "to announce" not necessarily to foretell the future.) To them we owe the gallant and ineradicable habit of protest that informs our whole cultural tradition. It is doubtful how far we would have advanced if we had possessed only the philosophical analysis of the Greeks, unmixed with the prophetic passion of the Jews.

But beyond this, the prophets had certain victories of their own. The greatest of these was the Abolition, not easily achieved, of human sacrifice (see "The Origins of Christianity" by author, Archibald Robertson, International Publishers, 1954, New York). It will be remembered that according to the writings Jephthah thus sacrificed his daughter, Abraham was quite willing to sacrifice his son Isaac, and the priest Samuel "hewed Agag to pieces before the Lord." It took a lot to civilize a deity in

those days when religions began to rule and every step in the civilizing of man came mostly from the few true Spiritualists there were left.

The earliest prophet whose writings we may suppose ourselves to possess is Amos, the peasant poet. He saw and denounced the crimes of exploiters – and surely it must have been an extreme conveyance now lost to us, to put denunciation in the mouth of Jahweh himself.

“Listen to this,” cries Amos through Jahweh – you men who crush the humble, and oppress the poor, muttering, “When will the new moon be over,” that we may sell our grain? When will the Sabbath be done, that our corn may be on sale? (small you make your measures, large your weights, you cheat by tampering with the scales) and all to buy up innocent folk, to buy the needy for a pair of shoes, to sell the very refuse of your grain – Amos 8:4-6.

Nor does gallantry limit his indignation. The wives of the rich, as anyone could see, were fat and bovine:

Listen to this, you cows of Bashan, you women in high Samaria, you who defraud the poor and are hard on the needy who tell your husbands, “Let us have wine to drink!” As sure as I am God, the Lord eternal swears, your day is coming, when you will be dragged out with prongs, the last of you with fishhooks; out you go, through breaches in the

wall, each of you headlong – Amos 4:1-3.

So sang the first of the known prophets, in a time when priests' frauds had begun to seem most intolerable. We are told in One Samuel Two that the sons of Eli were "depraved creatives" who, when people came to make burnt offerings, took the best part of the meat for themselves. We are also told in One Samuel Eight, that the sons of Samuel "turned aside for money, and tampered with justice and took bribes. It is an inclination of officials, whether priests or not!

Thus, the two sequences of events continued parallel, the prophets denouncing evil and the priests committing it, until some fifty years before the descent of Nebuchadnezzar. By then a series of invasions by Assyrians and Scythians had shaken up the community, and a time came at last that the people could deal faithfully with their ruling class. The priesthood saved itself by a judicious compromise, which accepted into the Law much of the prophetic program. These additions will be found notably in the Decalogue and in the inductions (Exodus 22:21-27) against usury, against mistreatment of aliens, widows and orphans. The "Decalogue," says Robertson, was the notice to quit served by seventh and eighth century prophets (B.C.) on rulers whose cults of fertility gods and fertility

goddesses, with human sacrifices thrown in for good measure, had signally failed to stave off calamity from their country.

The notice, however, was as usual ignored and the old pattern of domestic strife, conquest by foreign powers, and occasional captivity, and occasional rebirth, lasted until Roman arms and Roman government finally removed the Jewish nation from the face of this world.

In its own true time, the Roman Empire was, I suppose, the most remarkable administrative success that had yet occurred in known history. Before its appearance, Empires seldom lasted more than a century, and sometimes less. The prophets, therefore, could confidently predict the fall of every oppressor; the Jewish people could keep alive the hope of national liberation and social reform. Geography, the play of international politics, and a certain endemic love of freedom made them the most difficult of ancient peoples to govern. The jest that the modern state of Israel has a president attempting to govern four million other presidents has lively corroboration in old historical fact.

A successful movement towards ends so vast and valuable would require a leadership adequate to its success. One man would suffice if he were great enough and if he

did suffice, he might seem to have been consecrated to his mission from the beginning of the world. He would be the “Messiah,” “the Anointed One.” Surely a just and merciful God, having in mind the salvation of his people would in due time and at the historically right moment supply such a leader. This leader having freed the commonwealth from foreign oppression and domestic iniquity, would be seen as savior and redeemer; and the glory of his mission crowned with an ineffable glory of success, would show that his human nature had all along shared the nature of the divine.

Thus, toward the end of the Sixth Century B.C. when the Persian Empire seemed falling into that death which had already swallowed Assyria and Babylon, the Second Isaiah sang a celebrated hymn of hope:

“For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall fall upon his shoulders and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, the mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and Peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgement and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the lord of hosts will perform this.” Isaiah 9:6-7.

The Persian Empire survived to fall before Alexander,

whose imperial legacy slowly wasted away amid the quarrels of inheriting dynasts and the growing power of Rome. The Maccabean interlude, a great Jewish revolutionary success (168 B.C.) seemed for a time to be the promised fulfillment: He (Simon Maccabeus) made peace in the land, and Israel rejoiced with great joy: and they sat each man under his vine and under his fig tree; and there was none to make them afraid. (I Maccabees 14:12) Yet, after some seventy years, the misbehavior of the priests revived the social struggle within. A series of military defeats brought about a six-year civil war, at the end of which Alexander Janneus, Simon's grandson, crucified eight hundred Pharisees, and slew their wives and children before their eyes!

Thus, the Maccabean experiment closed in ruin and despair. A group of revolutionary purists, the Essenes, exchanging national for personal redemption, constituted themselves a brotherhood, practicing the common ownership of goods. They endured some persecution, in the course of which they lost a leader, whose miraculous return, however, they confidently expected! In them, in a section of the Pharisees, and in the lonely laborious multitudes, the revolutionary ardor lived on, never wholly quenched, through the vicissitudes of Roman civil strife into the Augustan peace and the Tiberian expansion. All

still awaited the predestinate Messiah, the Son of David, the Redeemer and Judge, who was to cast the mighty from their seats and avenge so long a grievous slaughter of the saints.

And then in Judaea in the reign of Tiberius, there appeared a man, a carpenter's son, who having labored to save his people, was posthumously believed to have saved mankind, and who, instead of being (like the Caesars) a man enlarged into a god, was held in the end to be a god diminished into a man!

There are some stories so charming, so perfectly at ease with human wishes, that their beauty seems persuasive of their claims. One at first accepts them, being young and credulous, then rejects, then, if one has grown wise enough, one lets the fable thrive – as fable! There cannot be a lovelier story than that of the child, the manger, the crowded caravanserai, the astounded shepherds, the adoring kings, the sudden singing glory of a heavenly host. If mankind here were to have among its progeny one single efficacious redeemer, this, one feels, is how he or she would be born.

But songs are not science, and poetry is not literal description! The historian, therefore, whose task is to seek out what has actually been the case, must be guided not by

metaphor but by probabilities. The Spiritual, therefore, whose task is to find, know, and understand what the actual truth is, must be guided not by metaphor but by his or her spirit and their Spirit Guide of the Kingdom of God! If the historian knows a good story when he sees one, he may also hope to know when a story is too good to be true. Now although I am not a qualified historian, I am certainly a qualified Spiritual, and from what I have written previously, it should be evident that the view I take of history and of Spiritualism allows me absolutely no belief in super-natural humans or in a God who can turn himself into a human or in a human who can turn himself into a god or God! The view Christian Orthodoxy takes of Jesus is simply denied me. I have to regard that view, being polite now, as a poem, a sublime poem indeed, but not as science, not as history, and most certainly not The Truth. I have to regard the historical Jesus as man only and no god, in precisely the same sense as I am a man and not a god! I “know” this view of the case is true, but I do not insist on its acceptance by anyone else, although I have a great zeal for people to Read and Study the Message of I Paul and “see” for themselves why I feel, think, act, and live the Way I do and Do the things I Do.

Yet whether the orthodox version be taken as history, science, or poetry, it is plain that the historical Jesus was in

his time and place anti-religion, a heretic then, and a revolutionist. Herein, therefore, I am obligated to state just what kind of anti-religionist, heretic, and revolutionist Jesus really was. Let me say at once, then, that Jesus was the leader of an armed movement for national liberation. The movement, betrayed on the eve of insurrection, was crushed, and the leader was arrested, tried and executed. These events happened in A.D. 33, three years before Pontius Pilate's recall to Rome which had absolutely nothing to do with the Jesus episode.

I am fully aware, that to millions of people it may be alarming to think of Jesus as a Revolutionary, even horrifying to the very devout Christian Religionists. Yet, many a Pope, many a bishop, many a priest, many a theologian and many a Christian historian have known this to be the Truth but could not or would not say it. There is in the Gospels even, direct evidence for this - evidence which is the stronger because it cannot be suspected of tendentiousness and may therefore be thought to record fact. Moreover, the view will go far to prove what really is tendentious in the gospels; and beyond that it will help explain why Christian theology is the sort it is, and more particularly, why the Christian God had to be a trinitarian.

This account of the historical Jesus, accordingly, I find

convincing, overwhelmingly so, and I think any sane and wise person who reads this will find it to be the Truth as I “know” it to be. Today, we humans know rather less about the historical Jesus than we do about the historical Socrates – how would you account for this? Three writers, three different writers – Plato in the Dialogues, Xenophon in the Memorabilia, and Aristophanes in The Clouds – have left reports of Socrates, who is visibly the same person in them all. But the four evangelists (by no means the persons they purport to be) were not separate observers of one man’s life. They were men reworking a tradition, partly oral, partly written, forty to eighty years after the events described. This reworking they did with an eye on politics. They wished to assure the Roman government that, whatever the Jews might be, the Christians were not subversive, and that the Master had not intended his kingdom “to be of this world.” They were the more eager to give this assurance, after Nero’s totally unexpected persecution in the year A.D. 64.

The pro-Roman, anti-Jewish tone of the gospels is sufficiently discernable, and appears most strikingly in portions of the narrative that are hard to believe. The disciples, for example, are portrayed as stupid and cowardly: they seldom understood the Master’s apothegms, they run away at the crucial moment of arrest,

and Peter, their leader, when asked “Are you now or have you ever been a follower of Jesus?” replies, “I don’t know whom you mean.” (Compare the four gospels on this.)

The Roman Procurator, Pilate, a tough imperialist, is described as humane and sympathetic towards Jesus, while the Jews howl for his death! And we are asked to believe that Pilate, whose primary duty was to put down insurrection was willing, under pressure, to release an imprisoned revolutionary, Barabbas, so that Jesus might die.

As we have seen, the Jewish people had earned, with much gallantry, a reputation for rebelliousness. The first “Christians” were a sect within the synagogue (Jewish Messianists, then), and the first “Christian” missionaries were Jews with a special message. It was natural enough for the Romans to regard the new movement as potentially subversive. The movement had then to dispel rebellion, disclaim it, though in this they never did convince the Romans. The Romans, you see, knew its origins far better than any historian or Christian Religionist alive today. They were aware that the messiahship of Jesus was exactly that, precisely that of John the Baptist and of Judas Maccabeus before him – namely that of the liberation of the land and the establishment of an ideal commonwealth.

Let us now examine some of the evidence of all this. We have said that the evangelists have left traces of original facts, like geographical, or better, geological remnants which show what the ancient topography was. For example:

Ever since the coming of John the Baptist the Kingdom of Heaven has been subjected to violence and violent men are seizing it. (Matthew 11:12 – proper translation.) Again, a parallel passage in Luke:

Until John, it was the Law and the Prophets: since then, it is the good news of the Kingdom of God, and everyone forces his way in. (Luke 16:16 – proper discernment.)

These are strange passages to find in narratives that purport to describe a man of non-revolutionary aims and otherworldly intentions. If they are metaphysical and only mean to say that one has to work hard to get into the Kingdom of God, they are remarkably hyperbolic. If they were later interpolations, we would have to suppose (what seems contrary to the evidence) that the apostolic missions had some revolutionary intent after all. My information is that the passages (of which many a historian and theologian have guessed correctly on) assert a fact which a thousand years of experience had demonstrated – namely,

that the liberation of the country required armed effort, and that thus only could one attain the Kingdom of God here on earth - not the Kingdom of God or the Spirit Kingdom, or as Matthew has it, the Kingdom of Heaven. There is no violence in the Spirit Realms, so it is obvious that both authors are speaking and writing about this earth, this world and not otherworldly. Can you “see” this?

Further, Luke’s gospel has a remarkable twenty-second chapter, in which among passages put in, apparently, later, in order to validate the Eucharist, we get the picture of a band of revolutionaries, a sort of executive committee or general staff, supping together on the eve of insurrection. The leader announces what he has surmised or been told, that one of them was a police agent. The little band is amazed and horrified; the police agent brazenly it out. A quarrel begins over who is to have the best appointments in the new order (“self” on display at its worst). The leader points out that honest and sincere revolutionaries do not seek personal advancement but only service to the whole community. Nevertheless, these lieutenants of insurrection will “eat and drink at my table in my Kingdom and sit on thrones as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel.”

Then, suddenly, the Leader says:

“When I sent you out barefoot, without purse or pack, were you ever short of anything?” “No,” they answered. “It is different now,” he said; “Whoever has a purse he had better take it with him, and his pack too; and if he has no sword, let him sell his cloak to buy one, for scripture says, ‘and he was counted among the outlaws,’ and these words, I tell you, must find fulfillment in me; indeed, all that is written of me is being fulfilled.” “Look, Lord,” they said. “We have two swords here!” “Enough, enough,” he replied. (Luke 22:35-38 - proper discernment - from a government point of view “outlaws” is a proper interpretation.)

It sounds like insurrection, does it not? And that is what it was and Judas’ treason becomes for the first time intelligently explainable. In the gospels, his act of betrayal consists in identifying Jesus to the arresting officers. But neither they nor the Sanhedrin needed such help. Jesus was by that time a notable public figure, who had been greeted at the city gate by a throng shouting the insurrectionary cry “Hosanna” (= “deliver us”). But if Judas brought word that the insurrection was about to begin (Jerusalem was jam packed by pilgrims for the Passover Feast), it was worth thirty pieces of silver.

Finally, that insurrection was the order of the day may

be seen from two passages concerning Barrabas. Mark says (15:7), “As it happened, the man known as Barrabas was then in custody with the rebels who had committed murder in the rising.” Luke says (23:19), “...this man had been put in prison for a rising that had taken place in the city and for murder.” Those were tumultuous times, and only the rich were safely pro-Roman.

If the historical Jesus was a social and religious revolutionary, and he most certainly was (but I am allowing people their own choices and beliefs), we can more readily appreciate the considerable body of radical doctrine which the gospels contain. The Golden Rule suffices of itself to outlaw exploitation, but besides this, there are many doctrines that envisage a precise reversal of the social order; the last are to be first, the lowly are to inherit the earth. Where the movement is concerned, there is to be “no business as usual” – the money lenders are driven out of the Temple, the upper-class collaborators with the Romans are “whited sepulchers full of dead men’s bones.” The legalists “strain at (out) a gnat and swallow a camel.” On being asked a treacherous question whether the Roman tax ought to be paid, Jesus asks to see the sort of coin that usually serves for payment. One of his interlocutors produces a denarius, and then stands self-confuted – self-betrayed – for who would be so likely to

have a denarius as a man in the pay of Roman officials. The would-be ensnarers are then silenced with a curt “Give Caesar what is his, what belongs to him, and our country’s freedom what belongs to it.”

Most striking of all, in many ways, is the encounter with the rich young man – a charming fellow, apparently, since Jesus is attracted to him at once. The young man, who has lived irreproachably, wants to know what more is needed for eternal life. “Sell all your property,” says Jesus, “and come join the Movement.” But the nice young man with all his riches, like many another, cannot change his class allegiances, cannot give up security, for a doubtful, but gallant, effect for social reform and a not too clearly spelled out change in the National religion. Obviously, the young man could fulfill two of Jesus’ three New Commandments, he loved and he thought well, but he just couldn’t follow the third – at least not to the Master’s satisfaction. He goes away sadly, and Jesus observes that rich men will always have great difficulty getting themselves into the ideal commonwealth: it is easier to get a camel through a narrow gate (the “Needle’s Eye” was a jocular name for a particularly narrow gate into Jerusalem).

At this the disciples, goggling as the gospel writers

like to have them do, cry out, “Well, if the rich can’t be saved, who can?” To which Jesus replies, “The Truth is that no one can do this alone, but if you join sides with history and the Spirit, all things are possible.” This accurate generalization is a long-time sinking in. Meanwhile the disciples, reminded of how much they themselves have given up, begin to worry about future rewards. According to Mark, the answer is:

“I tell you this: There is no one who has given up home, brothers or sisters, mother, father, or children, or land, for my sake and for the good news, who will not receive in this age a hundred times as much – houses, brothers and sisters (“The Family,” wise), mothers and children, and land (land reform), and persecutions besides; and in The Age to come eternal life (the “in” should be “from” – the Spiritual Age), and many who are first will be last and the last first. (Proper discernment – Mark 10:29–31 – the underlining and bracket inserts are mine.)

In this Age! The rewards, then, are clearly not all transcendental and postponed to another “era.” Here I believe the re-workers of the gospels erred – missed this passage, then. They are to be enjoyed in the same historical continuum in which they were striven for. These will consist in such economic prosperity, for example, as

“houses” and “lands,” and a wider, broader, interpretation of Family – a Fellowship and a Family to be all inclusive.

The “and persecutions besides” is either an interpolation or actually should be discerned as “and an end to persecutions,” and/or “an end to slavery.” Jesus clearly, in the make-up of that passage did not mean that there would be “Persecutions” (yet, those Five Words have caused many a translator and interpreter many a sleepless night).

Since Jesus’ aim was national liberation and the elimination of the National Religion, just how skilled a leader, how good a judge of the historical and religious moment may we assume him to have been? Looking back, as we do, of the long life, the brute stability, of the Roman Empire, we, or rather you, may believe that he miscalculated badly. But he did nothing of the kind! Palestine was always on the fringe of the Roman Empire. One might reasonably expect, that a popular movement, devotedly and intelligently led, would be able by force of arms to break away from that fringe and establish an independent state. Others thought so during those years. It had been John the Baptist’s idea as well as Jesus’, and it had also been Barabbas’ (John lost his head and Barabbas

jumped the gun and Judas, seeing the movement's destruction, put an end to the whole scheme).

Nor should we believe Jesus was mistaken in his "general staff," his disciples. Their alleged stupidity is an incredible fiction. They were all smart revolutionaries and willing warriors, ready to lay down their lives for freedom – some of them, of course, had little or no respect for religion nor its hierarchy, and were solidly behind Jesus' plans to destroy it – after all, the National Religion leadership and the Romans were the actual enemies of the people and the very forces that kept them all enslaved.

And, as I said, they knew perfectly well what the movement was all about, and when it failed, before it got off the ground, and there was plainly no chance of a similar enterprise at that time. They preserved and disseminated what they could of it – the great ethical doctrines, the great social ideas – dropping for the moment the destruction of the National Religion. In fact, with much credit to Paul, they did this so well, that some segments of "Christianity" have kept alive the Revolutionary and Spiritual ardor that was Jesus', right into the 20th century – something all the religionist theologians have been unable to quench with their deliberate lies! And the ones willing to lay bare the facts are quickly throttled by the Church's hierarchy.

Lastly, there is no doubt the movement had won the people. We have, straight from the gospels themselves, the priests' word for that: They told Pilate, "His teaching is causing disaffection among the people all through Judaea. It started at Galilee and has spread as far as this city." There is some reason to think, indeed, that the Romans and their collaborators struck at the last possible moment, and that further delay would have been perilous, for Jesus had understood the law of all such movements, that people must be enlightened about their true social and spiritual interests and then organized to attain them - "You shall know the Truth and the Truth shall make you Free."

The burden of leadership is heavy, even in the midst of great Faith and great Hope! Jesus in Gethsemane gathered his courage and wished what every True leader wishes - that he might not have to lead - knowing the while that the assigned task and its ultimate goal were his. It was however the moment before catastrophe. Officers came up with soldiers and arrested him. Then unfolded the familiar sequence: The rump trials, the defamatory questions received with silence or irony, the scourging (Roman tradition), the mock regalia and the crown of thorns (because he would be a King), the cross he was then too weak to carry, and at last the awful death itself. As he hung there, slowly dying, he saw the oppressed being used to

maintain the oppression and he muttered, “Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.” Soon he was heard to shout, “My power, my power, why has thou forsaken me?” – death came shortly after and it came silently.

On the way there, there had been a moment when for the first time he realized two things – someone or something had taken over his entire life, internally and externally, and he knew, for the first time that all was over, the movement, so green with promise, was doomed as far as he was involved. If he thus failed who should or could succeed? Could it be done without arms? Could it really be accomplished by love through brother and sisterhood? If he thus failed, and he paused for a moment in his thoughts, and then said, along the way of the ghastly march, “If they do this when the wood is green, what will they do when the wood is dry?” (Luke 23:31 – personal translation.)

He was crucified beneath a legend which ran: “This is the King of the Jews.” The words were satiric but not mistaken. It was precisely what he had all along intended to be. And perhaps because he so intended, and perhaps even more so because he failed, he remains to this very day, the inspirer of revolution, the herald of human Fellowship, Friendship, Familyship, brother and sisterhood, the immortal bringer, and now keeper, of the

True Kingdom of God, of LIFE then, as the Compounded Christ, the LIGHT, then.

So ended an Episode that Changed this Earth, and the Kingdom of God, whether you realize this or not. Man and Woman were Changed, death was changed, and therefore we believe it safe to say, so too was the Universal Plan of the Supreme Spirit!

And what of others who were involved in the great Change, Changing, event? Pilate, quite unaware of anything unusual, went on to other business, and his wife to other dreams. The Sanhedrin resumed its watch against further insurrection. The disciples, surviving defeat and escaping capture, re-knit their unity as a messiah sect in the synagogue, and confidently awaited the leader's miraculous return. They reminded one another of all the miraculous things he had said - his preternatural insights that came so natural in the last weeks of his journeys - those astounding profundities, the massive love and kindness and patience and how he could sharpen and raise up even the Prophet's wisdom and how he could make a story like that of the Gadarene swine convey the message that the Roman pigs and their collaborators must be driven into the sea - they kept their peace and waited.

Then suddenly in 36 A.D., there occurred, in a quite

different culture and under quite different skies, a phenomenal event, of which the last echoes have not yet been heard. A certain Jew of the dispersion, named Saul, found unexpected relief from his emotional and religious way of life, when the crucified messiah appeared to him in a blinding Light on his way to Damascus to continue in his quest of persecuting those of the messiah sect. That, and his blindness vanished when the Light disappeared. He was never to be blinded again in the flesh but he was in almost constant contact with his Spirit Guide from that moment forward.

This remarkable man, called Paul by his Family members, was rather less dynamic, attractive, and quick as the Master was in the beginning but he learned rapidly and soon was a bona fide Spiritual Genius second to no one during his lifetime here on W-303. Although he had little personal knowledge of Jesus in the flesh, he almost single-handedly, established throughout the Roman Empire, at much risk of life and limb, a movement which much later after his death mastered the Empire itself and, afterward, the Huns, Goths, Vandals, and every other invader of the West. What he established as Families, were finally converted to churches and his Spiritual Movement based on Freedom and Love and self-rule as the Master had planned, or so Paul thought and believed, was finally

turned into just another religion once the gentiles broke forever from the Jewish Christians or Messianists – but we know all about that from the Message, so I will not belabor it much herein.

“Are you not aware that we are to Judge angels?” said Paul to the Corinthians, “How much more mere matters of business!” (I Corinthians 6:3 – the intent of the remark actually was to encourage Christian Spiritualists to settle their disputes with one another without going to law in the pagan or religious courts) – and so it proved – though, of course, he was not at that time foreseeing so great a historical result – to him the end was imminent at that time.

What, now was this organization, this Movement which Paul had to do with? Well, these were rather different from anything Jesus had in mind because Paul knew that insurrection in one place and at that time was unrealistic.

Jesus’ original intent was to establish a Free, utopian Jewish state in Palestine with himself as King and Law Maker, and in that Cause he had died.

Paul had not approved, and indeed opposed as a Pharisee, the effort at National Liberation – for various reasons, he saw the threat to the National Religion which

later established him as persecutor of the Jewish Christians and because he saw the impossibility of the whole plot. When he “surrendered” on the road to Damascus he began to direct The Movement, redirect actually, to success. It then occurred to him that most probably this had all along been his task in this life – he wrote in Galatians 1:15-16 these very revealing words about himself and his inner thoughts: “But then in his good pleasure God, who had set me apart from birth and called me through his grace, chose to reveal his son to me and through me, in order that I might proclaim him to the gentiles.” This is what the Apostle of the First LIGHT thought in the beginning and Romans explains somewhat better what he felt much later (The 13 will get a much deeper, a much more Spiritual Discernment of the letter to the Romans which is a little too hot for the Family at the present moment to handle).

Paul was also a Hellenized Jew, born at Tarsus in Cilicia, son of a Pharisee and a tentmaker which did business with the Romans and won for him and his family Roman citizenship. There was, unquestionably, as much Hellenism in his culture as there was Judaism, on top of this Paul was deeply into mysticism prior to his conversion. It took him some time to work himself and his thoughts out of all this and to be Changed into the great Spiritual Genius he became. He did it as we are also trying

to do it – through Spirit Guidance and by Preparing, Following, and doing exactly as we are asked without any delay or playing of games. We can “read” all of this happening when we compare his letters to the gospels. Intellectually the atmosphere of the Pauline Letters is strikingly different from that of the gospels, and is so in the way that Greek Culture differs from the Judaic. (Rabbi author Samuel Sandmel, “The Genius of Paul,” Farrar, Straus, and Gudahy – New York – 1959) The Rabbi says, and very persuasively so, that the Jews of the Dispersion stood to the Palestinian Jews as present-day Jews in America stand to their immigrant ancestors. There is a common tradition, modified somewhat, by a new and vast environment. It is unavoidably so, whatever one may wish, because problems have to be solved in the place where one lives, and in the circumstances there existing.

And Paul had problems – some physical, some social, some religious, some Spiritually and Mystically (Jewish Occultism) and some psychological, which with remarkable astuteness, he or the Spirit had analyzed to their foundation. He felt, acutely and lucidly, the desperate inner struggle which is known to us all as Conscience against “self.” The universality of this struggle, its presence in every sane person, supplied the ground for the eventual evangelical triumphs of Christianity, and put that

movement (for such it was) beyond the power of government to suppress. The Nascent Church which stole and altered both the Jesus and the Paul Movements won out. Jesus was dead, Paul was dead, their followers were gone, so it became simple to place words in the mouth of a dead man!

These striking circumstances lets us see, on a very large scale, the interplay with and of personal problems and social and religious and spiritual problems - it shows that any solution or failure in the one is likely to have disastrous or interesting effects in the others. Generally speaking, people solve what problems they can under the current circumstances. If a movement toward social reform, for example, collapses, if for a time there is no chance of solving problems by a reconstruction of society, attention turns towards psychological problems, which social injustice has itself made more acute. The very evil underlying public relationships makes life harder for everyone, particularly in respect of righteous behavior.

Now, the problem to which the Roman Empire addressed itself was the maintenance of chattel slavery. This inglorious task it had inherited from rivals or from predecessors, once formidable but brought down by their own inability to solve the problem. The Macedonian

Empire, which had destroyed with equal finality the independence of Greek city-states and the dominance of Persia, had offered the most impressive solution, but Macedonian control had not been wide enough. Nothing less than an organizing of the whole Mediterranean world under one supreme authority could suffice. While the great thieves were at war, the plundered masses could always find allies.

The Roman Empire, from Augustus' founding of it to Alaric's assault on it, a period of four hundred years, resembled a vast and powerful stomach engaged upon the digestion of indigestible materials. There were, to be sure, periods of calm, and Gibbon was perhaps not wrong to admire the apparent serenity of the Antonine Age. But chattel slavery, indigestible in itself, produced yet other disorders. Slave labor undercut the labor of free men: it hurled peasants from their farms and artisans from their shops. Floating multitudes of "free men," absorbable in no trade or even in the army, drifted across the Empire or congregated in cities, where (if we copy/borrow Tacitus's description of Rome) "From all sides every possible horror and shame met and found exercise." The grossest superstitions, the most debilitating vices, a drowning sea of violence and lust – such things these men were diurnally acquainted with. And it may be that worse than the peril of

death – though that was never absent – was the difficulty or (as it must often have seemed) the impossibility of being human!

So majestic a social edifice set upon so iniquitous a base cried out for rehabilitation. Yet the years went by, and the decades, and everything was much the same. From time to time the landscape grew hideous with the bodies of rebellious and crucified slaves, the legions marched and slaughtered and were slain, and in the subject provinces the ruling classes continued their intrigues with the Roman imperium. Events put off, and again put off, the messiah's triumphant return, until at last that climax was removed to an entirely different order of phenomena. Meanwhile there remained the sheer hopelessness and indecency of life. One had to do something about that, and if one could not alter "Conditions," perhaps one could alter oneself.

About the year 36 A.D., Paul's personal problems reached – or seemed to him to reach – sudden resolution. He had heard (and no one knew how or in what form) of Jesus' death, of a subsequent resurrection or, at least, the disappearance of his body which was supposedly under guard. This was all Paul knew, and as it turned out, all he cared to know, about the historical matter: in the authentically Pauline parts of the epistles there is only one

reference to any of the sayings Attributed to Jesus (I Corinthians 7:10, which repeats Jesus' declaration against divorce). Paul had little faith in overall social reform, and still less in any social revolution until, at least, he had established Spiritual Families from one end of the Roman Empire to the other. His feelings about the Jerusalem Christians were cold and untrusting and, at times hostile, yet he took up collections for them in their times of need. Yet, throughout his life he considered them dangerous, a threat to his Spirit led mission. Yet James, the brother of Jesus, accepted Paul's version of his own conversion and appointment as an Apostle, not called by man but by Spirit, specifically, the Spirit of Christ-Jesus (The celebrated conversion story, well worthy of "Luke's" narrative skills, is told three times in Acts 9:1-9; 22:6-11; and 26:12-18; the third time with embellishments confirming the mission to the Gentiles. Galatians 1:13-17 tells no such story as related in Acts, and moreover says that Paul did not go to Jerusalem until three years after his conversion, whereas Acts sets the time at a certain number of days.)

So, to Paul the news of a crucified and raised messiah at first did not sit well with Paul, not until the Road to Damascus. It was Paul, and only Paul, who knew what actually had happened. This was not the simple execution of a rebel only but an astounding Cosmic Event in which

the Messiah of the Kingdom of God, a ruling principle of the Universe, entering a human Life, suffering human afflictions, and both issuing from all these unimpaired - establishing, somehow, the certainty that sin and death as Paul knew them as the ultimate destroyers were themselves destroyed - what tremendous news! While continuing his walk to the City of Damascus, why, now, he could not fathom, he thought to himself, if one could teach, get across to the masses, so stupendous a thing, one could draw the inference, half-empirical and half-mystical that the essential work of salvation was done, and that what was required of men and women now, was not activity in politics but Activity in Knowledge, in Spirit, and in Truth! This was the Path, the Way, then, to Freedom, and better, to Eternal Freedom!

This remarkable man, Paul, who had suffered greatly in the duties of his earthly tasks and goal, who had traveled out-of-body and had also transcended safely to the first, second, and third Realms of the Kingdom, and more, and who had received “visitors from the Inner Circle of the Light,” who had received “his gospel,” not from men or by men, but from and by Spirit, who was almost constantly receiving guidance and proddings and corrections and enlightenments from Spirit, and who had to struggle, long and hard, to deal with “self” and to rid himself of his old

ways, of his Jewish-Pharisaic mysticism, i.e., the Kabbala or Jewish Occultism, who finally destroyed “the Law” with his epistle to the Romans, has been so much battered by middle-class intellectuals and rationalizers of all ilks, by “secularist,” atheists, agnostics, many religionists even, that intellectuals of our day and of all persuasions, cannot imagine how anyone has thought such things. Claiming to be “seekers of Truth” they reject the whole concept (just as the Roman church instituted the “great Pauline silence” as reported to us in The Message and which is a matter of public history) not perceiving that in their rejection they show themselves as oblivious of human and spirit nature as they really are to the foolish things, they do believe in. I, Paul, do not deny that some of the Pauline works read like a drama conceived with Aeschylean magnificence – full of Creative Thought and Creative Imagination – not harmful to those who do understand these matters that Do Matter.

Paul’s authentic epistles describe and imaginatively so, the state men and women here must inevitably be in so long as the wealth and power of a few derive from the poverty and impotence among many – whether the few are political, social, or religious. They tell those of us who can follow and spiritually interpret them practically all that is necessary for simple redemption, but the Message of I Paul, tells us all that is necessary to be a True Christian

Spiritualist and then some. For you, The Order of Thirteen, it goes beyond the True Christian Spiritualist and then some.

Speaking now strictly about Paul in the flesh and his Epistles, let me lay this on you for your comparison between Paul the man and Paul the Spirit and the Message of I Paul.

The Pauline drama breaks some of the rules of good theater, and is the more effective on that account. The climax has come and gone before the play begins. Everything essential, has already happened, is reserved to what dramatists call the “exposition.” The Star has died and been Risen, or in Paul’s case or drama, the Stars have been crucified and been Risen, the atonement has been accomplished, Justification has been established, the means of reconciliation have been made certain, only the cast now need Prepare itself, and go onto greater stardom. We settle down to enjoy the “catharsis” issuing therefrom. Thereupon Paul proceeds to show that dramatic catharsis is a more complicated affair than Aristotle had supposed. It is a drama, though a lesser drama, in itself.

The events accomplished, which are set forth in the exposition, reveal esoterically, and symbolically the fact that, wherever the social order is iniquitous, no great

benefit can be conferred upon men and women without sacrifice of the best and noblest among them. These sacrifices, however, are not in vain: they set the course of world history toward a perfect commonwealth (the ideal which has always alluded the human race, here). Moreover, they assist people to first adapt to prevailing circumstances however difficult and stubborn those circumstances may be. They teach them nobility of motive, steadfastness of character, a primal love for the disinherited, an Action of Righteousness and responsibility and an ease of mind – freedom within if not without – all steps leading up to ward becoming Fully Human. They allow one to replace the “carnal” lusts after wealth and power and domination of others, with gentler appetites for self-mastery, for a competence, and for a love humanized by trust and Respect, wherein Sharing and Caring for one another, as in a Family, becomes the norm and not the exception. In short, they “Reconcile” all persons to the world and the Kingdom by helping them to live decently in them at one and the same time – in the NOW, then, the Eternal Now – they redeem their faults by first blunting them and then eradicating them or changing them into positives, they assure all then of their own self-worth by connecting them with values and a Goal which are beyond damage and corruption and totally beyond doubt and fear.

This will get you to where you need to be from where you are not.

Disordered and dis-eased societies exhale pessimism and negatives like a fog, and the fog veils the truth from more than one sophisticate. They are, however, evident to not a few common folk, whose life experience, shrewdly interpreted, offers the verification. Sophisticates are usually hangers-on of power, and therefore it may be that sophistication lies in finding excuses for servility and unrighteousness. Which facts Paul had in mind, when he said, in language so metrical that the illiterate could commit it to memory:

...to shame the wise,

God has chosen what this world counts folly,

And to shame what is strong,

God has chosen what the world counts weakness...

(I Corinthians - 1:27 - proper discernment)

This insight sustained Paul and his brothers and sisters in their encounters with pundits and pedants. Every innovator of Spiritualism and its ideology has to meet these and bear their scorn and vilifications. There were, for example, some intellectuals at Athens. There were also, the

“spies” from the Jerusalem messianists who closely followed Paul’s trail (Paul always suspected that the young Mark had become one of these spies), undermining his Family Organizational Plan by imposing dietary restraints, adherence to the Law of the Jerusalem group, and circumcision. These matters being matters that do Not Matter and which also hampered Paul’s on-going good works and recruiting – most necessary for any success to materialize! Paul felt an organizer’s rage against pedantry, i.e., adherence to any and all religious rules. The great differences between Spiritualism and religion were beginning to surface. The Jerusalem movement stayed with Synagogue and the Temple while Paul raided the synagogues in search of converts to his Families and the Way to “The Way” – Christian Spiritualism – where the rules of the synagogue and the Law of the Temple had no place. Paul, then, simply but effectively followed his Master in these matters. In the great debate over circumcision Paul finally cried out in exasperation “I wish they would go ahead and cut the whole thing off” – (Galatians 5:12 – a better discernment than the bible). For the very heart of Pauline Spiritualism was simple and unpedantic – it held just those truths which the historic and Cosmic “Christ Crucified” happening could mean. No doubt the new and strange, or to some, novel

dramatization was a “stumbling block to the Jews and folly to the Greeks,” but people who really understood, whether they were Jews or Greeks or Romans or otherwise, grew aware of a highly effective Wisdom.

In the seventh chapter of Romans, Paul gives his own inner struggle as a typical case:

“We know that the law is spiritual; but I am not: I am unspiritual, the purchased slave of evil. I do not even acknowledge mine own actions as mine, for what I do is not what I want to do, but what I detest...I discover this principle, then: when I want to do the right, only the wrong is within my reach. In my inmost self I delight in the Law of God, but I perceive that there is in my bodily “self” a different law, fighting against the Law that my reason approves...”

He has the great wish and need for Righteousness but not yet the Power –something not himself, an elusive “self” with great strength of appetite, of compulsiveness, that insidiously intervenes to corrupt right decisions. This experience, bitter and sweet at the same time, is surely everyone’s portion, yet Paul knows the Way and he is

preparing himself and the changes, the results then, do come, compensatory. Three hundred years after Paul, Augustine was heard to cry out in his “Confessions,” “Oh God make me chaste –but not just yet.” That’s “self” working overtime.

It is by such conscious “self” put down, that we come to recognize our humanity and then are able to go on and spiritualize it! Our “Conscience” then begins as an adversary, whose commands, with seditious acumen, we try to circumvent.

With Paul, as with many others who belonged to the Judaic tradition, conscience had public manifestation in the Law, the Code of Israel – so much so, indeed, that he was willing to share the belief, common to many ancient peoples, that nothing is wrong until some authority pronounces it so: where there is no law there can be no breach of law (remember the wild west where the only “law” was the six-shooter?) – Paul knew though that if one could become a Spiritual, morals, ethics, Laws, rules, rites, dogmas and so forth, were unnecessary – just ask when unsure of oneself, what the Master would do – this teaching, far from explicating the moral life is, however the Spiritual Psychology of Jesus that Paul carried forward with him wherever he went. Even Augustine, who was not

always “right on,” was when he discerned the psychology as “Love, and do as you wish” – (Paul of course finally came to “know” and perceive that the Law, any law of man was unspiritual and unnecessary, and a tremendous hindrance to anyone wishing to be Fully Human, and to go on to be Fully Spiritual, while still in the flesh!)

The psycho-therapeutical problem is how to relieve the tension between appetite and Conscience, or as Paul has said, between appetite and the Mosaic Law and other laws of this earth and of men only. Until Jesus’ and Paul’s time, tradition had been satisfied with obedience, simple obedience, actually: you were a good person if you did what the Law required. Paul’s astuteness lay in perceiving that you would be a much better person if you got beyond the tension altogether, if you did the good, the right, and the true thing readily and Acted Naturally without needing any earthly laws whatsoever to threaten you. Some of this was Aristotle’s idea of the virtuous man or woman, but Paul was following Jesus, I believe the first to ground it in accurate psychology and in writing for all to peruse and follow – the mark of a true Spiritual Genius or, at least, one of the marks.

Thus Paul fully intended to lift the Physical and Spiritual Life to a new and exciting level of Consciousness

and Conscience and to introduce a certain Ease into righteousness and into responsibility and into familiarity with Spirit and all of this in a non-religious atmosphere of friendship, brother and sisterhood, in one huge happy and prosperous Family which, after his demise the spiritually ignorant and dour remnants of his “Dream,” as religionists, have completely forgotten. Yet during his lifetime the common people and, yes, some of their superiors also, welcomed the New Enlightenment for what it was. They were quite happy to be “Reborn Spiritualists,” to settle all accounts with their Conscience, and to postpone their wants in favor of needs, their own and the needs of others, and to live in loving, honest, and sincere Family relationships with one another, NOW and then.

They had had enough of wrongs and the miseries of trespass – they wanted Freedom. They were also well aware that brief and casual excursions into carnal appetites with no concern for related effects, drives one into a state of dis-ease and an agony of Conscience and stagnates the doer and prevents them from being Fully Human and Fully Spiritual. Paul’s Received Wisdom led him to “hardline” and “tough-love” the Corinthians, in a letter he sent to the Family there in Corinth (it was the custom for these Families of Paul to pass his letters on to other Families after they had been dutifully read and copied by each

Family Branch Archivist). This particular letter has never been located but he makes mention of it in I Corinthians 5:9. This letter spoke of Freedom and what must be given-up in order to be Spiritually and Emotionally Free of earthly “wants.” He came down hard on such matters as revenge, railings, gossip, back-biting, idolaters, covetousness, extortioners, haters, angriness, procrastination, unrighteousness, dishonesty, and effeminates, among other things. What he abhorred most were those who place stumbling blocks in the way of a brother or a sister, and those who would go out of their way to hurt them, physically, financially, and emotionally in their pursuit of happiness, Freedom, and Well-Being. He “hated” schemers and pretenders - liars all, despicable carnal beings, and everyone an Anti-Christ! Anathema on them, he cried! And he also wept real tears for them. Then, and this is classic Paul, he went on to say quite calmly, some of you were once like that but you have purged yourself of such matters that do not matter. And devotedly many of them hoped this to be True - Ah, the psychology of a Spiritual Genius with the proper contacts! Yes, even if we knew Jesus in the flesh, we are to know him no more in the flesh. We know him NOW only IN the LIGHT! Now when you can repeat that after Paul, you will also be a Paul. And you don’t have to see the Light that blinds to say so. “See,”

my precious Thirteen?

The kinds of behavior Paul specified on his own are, in our day, the familiar material of today's psychiatrists. Most of these "psychicians of the mind" would not accept most of Paul's Ways - for example his earliest views on sex which were tied to the imminent Second Coming. But Paul is, in fact friendlier to human wishes than the religious clergy would allow us to believe, whether they be the celibate type or otherwise (and a lot of gall they have - especially those "celibates" who turn to drugs or homosexuality in their frustrations as well as to willing members of the opposite sex). Paul is quite willing to concede that everyone, male and female, need some satisfaction just as he and the Master did. In that day and age Jewish bachelors didn't have their own homes at any age, they remained where they belonged - in their father's home.

You need to understand that First Corinthians as it stands today was a highly reworked and interpolated Epistle of Paul's to "purify it" for the benefit of the then, Nascent church. His views on sex, on women praying, teaching, or prophesying, were corrupted by church scribes' hands on orders of the church fathers. Women praying, etc., were only asked to wear veils. Men and

women who were burning up with desire were instructed to find, “seek-out” was the term used, a sister or brother Spiritual of like habits to spend their lives, the “balance of it” together in “Pure Spiritual Togetherness,” never “denying one another except when abstinence is practiced for the purposes of Meditation, Cogitation, Contemplation, Prayer, and ‘physical dis-ease,’ afterwards to come together again as one.” Paul did draw the line at going outside of the Spiritual Family for such “Satisfactions pure in the Eye of God, your maker who made you what you are.” And Paul always meant male with female and female with male, and nothing else! And to him incest (although forgiven by him) and homosexuality (also forgiven when ceased) were Anathema! As was adulterous behavior, in or out of marriage!!

Are you beginning to understand Paul a little better Now?

And Paul is similarly Spiritual about dietary matters, meat offered to idols, circumcision or the lack of it. Some of this issued from a therapist’s knack of making the patient comfortable and at ease but the greater part of all of the Above, came from his genius as a Family Organizer and Spiritual Teacher teaching his Family to Act Naturally within the duality of two minds, doing only what is good,

right, and true for you and your brothers and sisters – he really didn't want anyone to cutoff their “members”! or his membership. A mystic has to be All Things to all people – a Spiritual Genius IS!

From the Greek and Jewish traditions alike, he cut away all that might discourage membership in his Families – high-toned intellectuality and superstitions from the Greeks – Legalistic tabus and Rationalizations from the Judaic. He reduced to a bare minimum the required ideology, and this he endowed with an almost irresistible charm overlaid with Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence, and Love. God, Paul said, had so arranged this world that you could be rescued from demoralization and death. This was all you had to accept to become a Christian Spiritual. The rest and the best would Come freely through Preparation and Following the Way.

And if this wasn't enough, Paul, by way of making Faith even easier, supplied a few further “mind pictures” by which you may conceive it and attain it – “it” being, step by step, belief, Faith, Knowledge, the Full Measure of Faith, becoming Fully Human and Fully Spiritual and a True Christian Spiritualist and beyond (such as you, The Order of Thirteen). You might for example regard Jesus as a Second Adam who had canceled out the disobedience of the

first, or you might think that the Christ had adopted you as a foster parent adopts a son or daughter, and as Christ-Jesus were “adopted,” and best of all, by Joining the Family you could become in a mystical and very convincing Way an integral part of the Christ Spirit itself! The Fully Spiritual while in the flesh part, by and through obedience to the Mind of Christ! “See” better now?

The results were plain in the various families that Paul founded. Their customs, their strayings, their Preparations, their Following and their affections as a close-knit family among many families may be perused in Paul’s Epistle to the Corinthians, one in the eleventh through the fourteenth chapters. It is a very vivid picture of how Spiritual Families used to be, and how Paul intended them to be. Here was a small group of converts to Christian Spiritualism, mostly ordinary people, some slaves, and some men and women of status among them. As they expanded the slave population grew in leaps and bounds and carried the Message and the Movement into the households of the rich and famous.

Here they were in one of the great cities of the age, all, or most, trying to be comfortable with Conscience and to observe Paul’s directives, for example, “Let all be done decently and in Order.”

It wasn't easy. They brought into the Movement all sorts of ideas and preconceived beliefs, all sorts of talents, all sorts of preferences, some religious, some magical and some political. Instant believers and skeptics. Slave and master. Learned and illiterate. Rich and poor. Jew and Greek and Roman and Gentile. Religionists and agnostic. Revolutionaries and peacemakers – you name them, the Families had them! And to Paul, each and every one of them was an opportunity and not really a grave problem. Some liked to speak in the tongues, some were bent to prophecy, some enjoyed preaching, and some, a few, were teachers under Paul's absentee guidance. Since they all participated, in one way or another, there were arguments, likes and dislikes, then, over the validity of these various modes. But what said the Master Organizer, the Spirit Guide of the Family? Paul said that their several skills were all useful, that their differences need not disrupt but might rather confirm their unity:

There are varieties of gifts

but the same spirit.

There are varieties of service

but the same lord.

Paul was not, never was since his “blindness,” and is

not now, a sectarian – he was the opposite, actually. It was, and is, one of many lessons his followers, and the Christian religionists, have lost sight of.

On Sundays, which was not the Sabbath day to Paul or his Families, but which was the most suited day for the vast majority of Family members to gather together, the members had a common meal, a table fellowship, which served to celebrate their Familyship and to feed the poorer brethren and any and all who would make an appearance. It was a true meal and not the present Eucharistic ritual, and the Family diners sometimes wolfed their food and gulped too much wine (or came with too much drink already consumed). This was a little too much for Paul – “If you are that hungry and thirsty,” he said, “You who can well afford to, can eat and drink at home, and then come here and serve those who are less fortunate than you” – and even today, do we not see the exact same thing happening? –

There were cliques also (aren’t there always?). But Paul was quick to make use of them, for he said, “I am told that when you meet as a Family that you fall into sharply divided groups, and I believe there is some truth in it; for dissensions are at times necessary to show which of your members are sound.” Can you see the Spiritual genius at work in that quote? Cliques shriveled after that and order

was restored.

But the great thing of the Family was its Fellowship, Friendship, and its Caring and Sharing between its various branches as well as in the individual Families. Paul travelled around the Empire establishing Family branches, setting them up and selecting leaders and after instructing them he was off again to organize others. To Paul, Agapé was everything and nothing was worth anything without it, here! You might have a gift of tongues or of prophecy, you might understand mysteries and sciences, you might “give up” some things to feed and house the poor, you might take it upon yourself to be a martyr to save the Family or a member, but everybody Knew, Paul made sure of that, if you had not Agapé and if Agapé was not the motive for all actions and all your thoughts, and all your Doings, then you were in all truth doing nothing and were of no profit to the Family and of no point at all. For it had been learned, and well, that Love was patient and kind, free of envy and of boasting, happy to find goodness, reluctant to think evil, hopeful always, and expectant of the best. Through dimness’s and immaturities it had grown clear that people Need, for their own health and well-being, some measure of Faith in men and women and things, some great hope of future benefit, some intimate joy in one another. And everyone knew, or thought they knew, which was the most

important of all of these.

Such were many of the Family members, who in A.D. 64, were convicted (according to Tacitus) “Not so much as setting fire to the City but of hating the human race” (Annals - XV:44). It was not the first time, nor will it be the last, that innocent people have suffered ascription and been so wrongly vilified of views contrary to those they actually hold and practice. But in those days the Followers of Christ were a small minority, a defenseless target. Nero had no qualms and absolutely no trouble in blaming them for something he did himself, and everyone who was someone in that day knew the truth of it. And no one could guess though, in those days, not even the lunatic Nero - what strength was growing in the Charity that seeketh not her own, in the Charity that is not easily provoked, in the Agapé, then, that is patient and kind, free of envy, slow to anger, and so forth.

If only Paul had lived longer there would possibly be no Christian church today. Tradition, religious tradition, that is, has it that Paul died in the Nerorian persecution - he did not! He died elsewhere, on soil foreign to him, and his death will be related to you of the Thirteen in a very Special Communication by the Spirit of the Message of I Paul, Itself.

Paul left to this world a Movement that turned Orthodox, a psychology that became a science, a scattering of Families that became churches, and from which the churches became an Empire. It has all been terribly remarkable, but it has never, since Jesus and Paul left this Earth of ours, never been the Kingdom of God and never will be as long as religion and not Spiritualism is the mode here on W-303.

Now even I know why I have been telling you all of this - you are The Order of Thirteen and you Needed to Know all of this.

Now, getting back to the Inner Eye of the Love, the Heart, the Wisdom, and the Volition let me say the following --

Now that you know more about the Legacy that is yours to Keep Alive and Well, to Protect and Cherish, we need to spell out some of its benefits - especially those that accrue from Self-Mastery via the Inner Eye.

In order to understand the nature of mystical knowledge it will be helpful to concentrate on the human psyche, the lower mind then, and what we will cite as, the psychology of it. From this, picture the lower mind as a huge iceberg (as some of today's psychologists do), of which only the tip rises above the water, while underneath

lies a whole world of wonder and terror, of light and of darkness, of good and of evil. Or we can view the lower mind as many layers of consciousness, one superimposed upon the other – the lower layers active and the upper dormant – waiting to be activated through “discovery.” Or we can view the lower psyche as a polyphony, a multitude of sounds, or voices, some lower and some higher. In our Awake and Aware states, it is the higher voices that usually dominate our mind and lead us, but our conduct is all the time influenced by the lower voices, too. In this way of thinking the term unconscious is, strictly speaking, a misnomer: Nothing is unconscious in the psyche.

Whatever way we picture our mind, the micro-cosm, the essence of “The Mind,” the Cosmic Consciousness or the inner universe, it has been and still is being investigated by psychologists and explorers in unconsciousness from Freud and Jung to Aldous Huxley and from Socrates to The Order of Thirteen and its Spirit Guide – for we too, by Spirit Directive, are students of the Minds.

And I dare say we already know more about the Psyches than all those listed above do, collectively. Yet we still have a long path to traverse before we solve all of their nooks and crannies and the Secrets they are hiding there,

awaiting our welcome intrusions.

What precisely the psyches contain we do not know yet, but one thing ought to be clear to all of us – the deep forces of the so-called unconscious are profoundly energized by the secret powers of Pure and True Love, the driving forces that electrify the heart, the wisdom, and the Volition. I am speaking now of the Love that is unfathomable – the Love of a mother for her child, the True Love of a Woman for her Man and vice-versa, the Love of God that is beyond our imagination – the Power and Energy that knows no boundaries and that which moves our inner All and stirs mysterious, and at times, uncontrollable forces within us all. The Love that none of us in this life cycle can escape entirely, for it is the Voice of the Supreme Spirit calling out to us and Its Creation. Many a time, when in despair and discouragement, that voice, calling out, has calmed the waters and comforted us – and God has been dragging my heart and my love around ever since – and I've got no complaints.

There is a human question which psychology never seems to ask and which leads many of us to Spiritualism, and then, if we really work at it, into mysticism; namely, what lies at the deepest recesses of the Psyche? Ironically, many humans couldn't care less, while others, fear to find

out. But we who dare to go where others fear to tread and dare dream Dreams and are willing to pay the price to make them come true, just have to know. Just what is the basis, the center, the proof of it All? Put into Jungian terms we might ask: When I go beyond the ego, beyond the personal unconsciousness, beyond the Collective unconscious, beyond the archetypes, what do I find? And in answer to all this, all the true mystics and True Christian Spirituals, and all the great Spirit Guides speak of a mystery which they cite by various terms: the divine speak, the first principle, buddha nature, brahman and atman, the Spirit, the Image of God, the Light, and so on. They use different terms only because they come from different cultures and backgrounds but all mystics who are also True Spirituals and not religionists employ only “Divine Consciousness” when conversing with each other – face to face or otherwise. Furthermore, Divine Consciousness is known also as Infinite Love, and Divine Energy, the Powers that drive the Collective Psyches and their layered levels of Consciousness. These layers or levels of Consciousness, usually dormant, are aroused and the Inner Eye comes to “see,” the inner voices become audible, and the spirit with us is what we need become fully aware of and get in tune with and pay close attention to. This is not easy. We need learn the art of discernment if we are to understand and

follow the Conscience – the key to the deep and profound inner recesses of the Lower Mind, the place where the Inner Eye and the Inner Ear operate from and that Mystical Knowledge arises from – a different type of knowledge from that we ordinarily live by. Mysticism does not mean that we learn only new things but that we learn to know in a new way so that we actually do Know! And we do know because mystically or mysteriously in meditation, cogitation, contemplation we have, somehow, shifted gears and gone out of our bodily physical senses and up into the Receptor Senses where we see and hear without benefit of the common senses. When we OBE and/or transcend, leaving the physical body behind, we “travel” with Common Sense and the Receptor Senses Fully Activated.

Now if all this seems “mysterious” to you, let me quickly remove all the mystery from it. What the World knows as mysticism, you and I know simply as an Altered State of Consciousness – Up-ward and To-Ward the Kingdom of LIFE and LIGHT – all the Levels of Consciousness are the same; when activated; altered levels of Consciousness then are the One, the same Consciousness – Altered! “To Act Natural is to be your “True-Self” within a duality of minds.” You should view this “duality of minds” as One Mind, Altered, i.e., as a split

Consciousness same as you would think of a split personality. And since this is actually how it is, it blows all to hell all the claims of the false mystics – the religious mystics and turns such as St. John of the Cross into what they truly are – Poets in Love with a Poem – very deeply so, to be sure, but still only very imaginative Poets, who sincerely, and very honestly believe, all they have conjured up, to be Real and to be God. And if we can “see” poetry as God working through the poet then we can better understand the sincerity and honesty and devotion of the religious “mystic.” But the bottom line is the truth that religion is not transcendable!

A True Mystical experience gives real knowledge, Real Wisdom, and a clear Understanding over and above what the ordinary senses provide and the lower, distorted mind is capable of absorbing on its own.

If, as the religious mystics claim, that the mystical experience is ineffable, then the whole experience is useless and reduced to a play thing. True Mystical experiences are not blind inner movements of poetic imaginings but have a definite cognitive content and purpose. They are levels of profound insight and depths of truth attainable only in the Trance States. They are revelations, enlightenments, illuminations, corrections,

discoveries and directions – all Received with a great feeling of Authoritative Love seeking our Obedience. A “Be still and hear,” and a “Be Active and Obey” sort of authority. To discern what one learns in such experiences is difficult but not impossible. My own discernment of a transcendence to the House of Wisdom should settle the Truth that such mystical experiences are not ineffable.

The very act of “sitting to receive” is a mystical experience; if you Receive! And what is received is certainly discernable by a qualified discerner. A Lucid Dream is a mystical experience and can also be discerned by a qualified discerner. Lucid Dreams also spill over into what True Mystics, Spiritual Guides, True Christian Spirituals and Spiritual Genius’ would cite as “Visionary Experiences” which can be experienced at any level of Consciousness – witness the happening of Paul on the road to Damascus for one example – he was most certainly in a distorted level of consciousness when he experienced a very definite and definitive change of mind!

A single, true mystical experience is everlasting, never fails you or fades away – it is one of those layers of Consciousness eternally Activated and permanently yours – it is a permanent awareness that is impossible to lose.

A True Mystic knows the experience of being totally

controlled by a Power deeper and greater than his or herself – not possessed, mind you, but controlled in the sense of direction or of being moved by a Power much greater than themselves. It is in this state or level of consciousness that I have extensively experimented with and through such experiments have gone many days and nights without eating or sleeping with no debilitating side-effects which I usually do experience as “traveling.”

These long, conscious hours of sleeplessness and fasting are as much a Mystical experience as an OBE and a Transcendence – not as exciting or exhilarating, I grant you, but still a Mystical experience while fully Awake and Aware and Keeping the Watch.

You see, people really make too much ado over mysticism, as if it were some deep, dark, and mysterious unknown that is better left alone or left to the priesthoods. How terribly wrong and ignorant this is. True Mysticism is as simple and readily available as is your honest and sincere effort to master the Art is. For example, let me illustrate to you a very simple but profound mystical experience – “I have never seen the wind but I have often seen the clouds move. I have never seen time but I have seen the leaves fall.” “See”?

If one truly wants to be a Mystic, a True Mystic, all one

needs to learn is How to Unite the Opposites and, then, in all good Conscience, go ahead and Unite Them! And the Message of I Paul tells you how to do this.

I take mysticism very seriously and I shudder to think that the instructions for meditation could be thought of as mysticism, or even mystical in their make-up. Mysticism is very serious business and has absolutely no matter that does not matter within its contents. There have been in all of the world's religious schools of so-called quietism and passivity, and their brand of mysticism continues to this very day and they are yet to produce any true mystic with the exception of the very few who turned their backs on their false religious traditions once they had broken successfully through the barriers.

These “schools of mysticism” acted as though they were the meditation experiments familiar to many around the world. “Be absolutely still – Breathe deeply and relax – Empty your mind – Don’t think – Blot out everything – Forget everything – Slay all consciousness – Concentrate on one thing only – and so on.” This is not mysticism – this is foolishness when related to True Mysticism! The mystics of the Dionysian tradition speak of the “secrecy” of mysticism – “mystical knowledge is hidden in the depths of one’s being” and, if I may add, so too, is the Kingdom of

God within, but it isn't hidden! It's there for all to seek and find. John of the Cross writes, "This contemplation which is secret and hidden from the very one who receives it..."

Secret from the one who receives it! How would he or she know that? True Mysticism is Cognitive, not secret!

Religious mysticism is mythical poetry of the false myth category. Religious mysticism is related to such things as lights, bells, incense, sweet odors of Spirit, and ecstasy, Always the ineffable ecstasy, whereas ecstasy, and odors, and bells and lights, and incense, are all matters pertaining to the ordinary senses of the flesh, is a pure sign of superficiality and a wild, uncontrollable imagination - it makes for good poetry just as the gospels do - but neither represent the truth.

Mysticism, the Spiritual Kind is an acquired Knowledge that comes after the Completion of the Meditative, Cogitative, Contemplative cycle - it comes unannounced and quietly and simply raises your Consciousness up a level and automatically reduces your degree of distortion. It's simple, painless, invisible, and illuminating. Yes, there is Light at the end of the tunnel, but you have to be in the tunnel to see it!

True Mysticism opens up a brand-new door on to a more abundant psychic way of life. And when the Inner Eye

becomes accustomed to the dark it perceives that the darkness is Light and all is Well.

I want you all to Know and clearly Understand that True Christian Spiritualism is your primary task in The Order of Thirteen – the being one and the making of others – it’s a way of acquiring Mystical Knowledge. Those endowed with Spiritual-Mystical Knowledge were, and are, the most active ones – the inner light has driven them into constant Action. They are not only conscious of the spirit within them they are Fully Aware of the Spirit’s working through them, dynamically Alive in them and for them and driving them to union with brothers and sisters and the Cosmos.

Such active people, it is true, need periods of silence and solitude, but it is also true that they carry everything with them that matters in their minds and therefore are capable of resting when they don’t rest and of being in silence when all around them Chaos reigns and of being in solitude whenever they so desired to be regardless of the current circumstances or hindrances. Fully Prepared Ones, then, and dedicated Followers of the Way to “The Way,” then.

Indeed, without these kinds of activities it is difficult to slay “self” and keep it slain in order to rise up to the

level of those who were raised Up. It is through this dedicated Activity that the Inner Eye is opened and we truly come to see what was only seconds ago invisible to naked eyes. God you cannot be – but an Ambassador, Mystic, Servant, Slave – a True Christian Spiritual, then, you must be within The Order of Thirteen.

How does one get involved in or decide to become a Christian Spiritualist? Down through the ages there have been many interesting stories about how some people came to be Spirituals and Christian Spiritualists and who went on to become True Christian Spiritualists and mystics and True LIGHT Spirituals.

The Spiritual-Mystical experience begins with an invitation. It is seldom something that we strive for by personal effort (that comes after we have knowingly or unknowingly accepted the invitation) – and when we strive, we must always remember that our striving is a gift. It is a personal call from beyond oneself. Sometimes this call is dramatic, as the flash of Light that blinded Paul on the road to Damascus. At other times it is a quiet call – what is described as a still small voice – like the “voice” that summoned Elijah, a voice that may have been with him from his birth.

My own call was one to sit and receive – a call that

convinced me, or almost so, that I was going mad. I need say no more, you know or can see the outcome of my invitation.

At times the invitation is so delicate, so subtle, so unobtrusive that the recipient does not even realize that he or she has been called until much later, and at times has to be reminded: “You did not choose me, but I chose you.”

Many have been called to our Family and many, many, have come. Out of that “many” less than five percent have remained and we know these were the Ones who were Chosen, whether you, or you, know it yourself.

As a True Christian Spiritualist is where True Mysticism begins – and it begins with the experience of Being Loved! We love because Spirit first loved us. The secret of the energy and fire and genius of Jesus, and then Paul, was not so much that they loved (this was actually secondary) as their “Knowing” they were loved and perpetually being loved. The call is gratuitous then – the choosing is something else. The invitation doesn’t come because you or I are good but because LIFE is Good. “Don’t call me good, only my Father who is in the Kingdom is Good.” And so, the principal thing in the mystical life is not to love but to receive love, not to love LIFE and LIGHT and your brethren but to let yourself be Loved by Spirit and

your brethren. Don't put barriers in the way – don't put a defense mechanism – don't have likes and dislikes – Let Love come in – All Love, because human love is a response to Spirit Love. This is the message to The Order of Thirteen. The key to mysticism. To refuse love, any love, is to enter the darkness, then and there!

I am hopeful that all of you are, by now, fully cognizant of what the Message of I Paul has to say about “Love” – physical and spiritual – True and Pure – Eros and Agapé, and so forth. If you are not, then get that Way! Remember you were chosen for Inherent Possibilities and in order for you to Activate those inherent possibilities you need to nurture them – feed them then with Knowledge and Love and Truth and “the” Effort. (I know you are all trying, all working diligently. Yet, and you examine this closely, you have forgotten more of the Message than you have retained. You tend to get “stuck-in” on one or two particular tasks or subjects, and forget the Message itself and all of its Knowledge, Insight, and Answers to those things you are stuck in to. Twenty-six eyes and twenty-six minds and twenty-six ears are what you should be working from and with – see?)

All True Christian Spirituals–Mystics are Practicing Spirit Guides – all three go hand in hand. And, as such, we

understand completely, that even though our love is secondary to the Love of LIFE for Us, Our Love and Loving is, here, primary to us. Insofar as I, Paul, know, no Practicing Spirit Guide has ever been capable of maintaining perpetual love for anyone. We always err, we anger, we forget, we lose patience, and so forth. And the Two Spiritual Genius' we know best did exactly the same things we do now.

We humans are simply not perfect. No matter how diligently we strive to "Act Natural" we forsake the higher mind and True-Self, time and again, to go with our wants, our carnal desires, and the pressures of "self" over the dictates of the Conscience. This is, of course, a form of "self-love," but it is not of the type the Message of I Paul has in mind for us to manifest.

Love, as the saying goes, is a many splendid thing. But too many people take that word "many" far too literally and count far too many things as Love, which are not Love. Webster defines "love" as having sexual intercourse - but it doesn't define "sex" as love. All living things, humans, animals, beasts, insects, vegetations, etc., all have reproductive ways and mores, but we would be terribly ignorant, to go so far as to label all of this reproductive activity as love.

The Message of I Paul can be reduced to one word, “Love.” It cannot be reduced down to mean “sex,” or “sexual intercourse.”

We all know that God, LIFE then, IS Love. And since this is true, so too, are Life and life, “Love,” also. Collectively, then, Life and life and LIFE are living beings or things that are LIFE’S Love; Are Love, then; and not “Sex,” then. Sex is the Gift of God’s Creative Powers to Man-Woman, to animals, plants, and so forth - sex, then, is a gift from Love, not Love itself.

To all Practicing Spirit Guides Love is a living and burning reality that arises within and is best described in symbolic language - it is an eternal living Flame of Love, a blind stirring of the Purity of Love - a dark night turning into the Light of a “knowing” dawn - A quiet movement in the very depths of one’s being, an intense conviction of being in Love without restrictions, the urgent longing which motivates the whole Spiritual-Mystical Journey.

One dark night, as it was waning,

Fired with Love’s urgent longing.

Ah, the sheer grace of being!

I went out unseen, and seeing.

And we all have this inner light which guides and directs us. All need find it!

There is much about Love that is difficult to explain without employing symbolic or esoteric language, but here I, Paul would like to explain, as best as I can, the macrocosm of Love, as well as the microcosm, and in language you can understand and, hopefully, someday, so too will the writers and publishers of all dictionaries.

I am going to begin with some of the basic foundations of what Love is, and means, and then I will go on with the explanations of the extensions of what Love is from those primary foundations.

You may experience some problems of what it is I am going to relate to you here - that's why it is imperative that all of you learn all there is to learn from the Message of I Paul on this subject directed to the Family proper. What you receive here is, for now, strictly for The Order of Thirteen.

Pure Love is the Divinity of God, LIFE, then. The ineffable and ineffaceable Love and the Creative Love deeded to man-woman through Christ, the LIGHT, then, and not "just" for the purpose of procreation - there does exist the matter that does matter, Creative Thought and Imagination.

True Love is the divinity of man-woman. The immortal Love and the Power and Love of Creativity. True Love is also vicarious Love, not Pure Love; expressed by a man or woman by an act of “giving up” something, personally dear, for the sake of another’s Well-Being, Voluntarily.

Grace, and this is my own personal thought, is the Love of the All in All - the mysterious, Uniting Love. Grace, the Loving Protector of all that is and can ever be. Grace - the Doer of Things you are not capable of doing for yourself, and mysteriously so. Grace - LIFE Communicating.

Agapé is the unselfish Love concerned with the Well-Being of others. To Love as Christ Loved us and continues to Love us. It is the spontaneous, altruistic Love, the “Being Present” Love and the Sharing of all the Good, the Right, and True Things of Life with all others, the reciprocal Love, the Caring of others in the Good and Bad times, and the Love of togetherness - of Familyship, Fellowship, brother and sisterhood, and of Friendship. As Jesse said, “Agapé is the Laborer of Grace.”

Love cannot be divided against itself any more than Truth can. You can do nothing against Love nor against Truth. They stand invincible and infinite but never against

nor aloof from anyone here, there, anywhere. In other words, Love is Love, and Truth is Truth, Period. Neither you nor I nor anyone else can move them, remove them, or alter them. You can only accept Love and Truth and allow them to flow Freely In, and, as Freely Out – simply let them be what they will be – their Collective Way In is their Collecting Way Out.

Love is the key to all of our Needs – rejoice in the Purity of it, be happy in the Trueness of it. Sex is beautiful, but it is not Love – but one way of many ways of expressing Love – while Love itself is magnificent and Divine and ineffable – yet, always Present when you are.

So, you see my dear Sister and Brother Spirit Guides, Love is a many splendid Thing, for it is Divine, and Spiritual, and Mystical, and Cosmic, and Earthly, and passes no one by, forsakes none and forgets none, and is the Great Healer, Peacemaker and Uniter and never forces itself upon anyone nor attempts to possess them, even though it is always there, no matter where you are, or may go.

Now I'll give you some of the High Side of Love. In macro-micro of the above I mentioned sex but I omitted "Eros." Now I'll address it. Webster says, in Greek mythology it is the God of Love – associated with the

Roman Cupid. Webster fails to mention that Eros was also known as “Phanes.”

Eros – A symbolism of the Highest Self in its Aspect of Love – that which draws all things to itself in Unity.

By the philosophers and in the mysteries, Eros was regarded as one of the fundamental causes in the formation of the Earths, inasmuch as it was the Uniting Power of Love, which brought Order and Harmony among the conflicting elements of which Chaos consisted.

At first Chaos was, and Night and dark Erebus, and Wide Tartarus. There were no earths or air, but much space – but first of all black-winged Night lays an egg, a wind-egg in the boundless bosom of Erebus, from which in revolving time sprang the much-desired Eros, its back glittering with golden wings, like the swift whirlwinds.

Translation = “At first matter is homogeneous and formless, and from it arrives the capacity for taking forms (Night), and also the power for producing forms (Erebus) in the lower manifestation (Tartarus). But as yet there are no physical, kama-manisic or buddhimanisic planes. Then it is that the aspiring form side (Night) brings forth a spiritual germ (wind-egg) of Love and Truth for embodiment to the Natural Order so that in the course of time and in the Presence of Involution, the Highest Self

should manifest its Nature in the spirit and rise triumphantly in Evolution to the higher planes at the end of the cycle.”

Love is an essence of divinity – Love is that by virtue of which all things are produced, which is in all things, and is the Vigor of all things; by its guidance spirits rise in contemplation by the power of flight it inspires, the difficulties of Nature and the Physical Law are overcome and True selves head for Unity with LIFE.

“Love, then, is the Creative Action of the Universe, at all Levels, the Force and Energy which pulsates from LIFE through the LIGHT to Life and life to individuate itself innumerable godheads or centers of godheads which all Living Beings are, or shall Become” (a message to the Earths – the Book of Life).

Phanes – (God?) The manifestor – often cited as the second-logos (and properly so) or the LIGHT which he proceeds from the Absolute, the Supreme, as a Divine germ of Universal Life and life.

Orpheus says: “The triple God born from the Egg was called Phanes, and also Metis and Ericapaeus, the three being aspects of the Power.”

Of the three aspects, Phanes is said to be the “Father,”

Ericapaeus the “Power,” and Metis the “intellect” in Platonic terms – Phanes was also called Love (EROS) also the Limit or the Boundary, also intelligible LIGHT.

The discernment = the Highest Self comes forth through Three Aspects – Will (Phanes), Wisdom (Metis), and Action (Ericapaeus) – the “Action” also being interpreted as Power – the Highest Self is the divine attraction or Love; (also called Atma by some) the Highest State of the manifest and the Light of all Truth – “The Truth”! – End of Eros!

And, leaving Eros behind us, we shall go on with “Love” – Let us begin with “Love of LIFE”: An intuition or direct sense that all things in the natural, ethical, and the intellectual orders, despite appearances to the contrary, work together. Truth acquired best enables us to realize Wisdom, but not Divine Love, for which the Full Measure of Faith is necessary.

To “Know God” is to see in the laws and events of nature, the Natural Order, then, the Revelations of LIFE’s Will – the Supreme Spirit’s eternal decrees. To “Love God” is to accept the Order of this Earth, with all its necessities and invariable sequences and even with its apparent indifference to human behavior and character, as not only inevitable but leading toward perfection. Further, to know

and love God is to know and love one's fellow human beings. For they too are part of that real world which "expresses" LIFE, and hence all that makes for their Well-Being makes for one's own:

While we necessarily have only partial experiences of the good, the right, and the true, we have also what appear to be their contraries - but the appearance is illusory - it is of the form and not of the Life.

The True-Self tends towards that with which it has the greatest affinity, as the sunflower tends toward the sun, and this affinity of our spirit tends to wards Wisdom, Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence, and Love. The Symbol of Love is Fire, for Love converts the object of Love into the Lover, as fire is of all elements the most Active, the most Potent to transform others into itself. It is the divine in man-woman that makes them, or impels them, to Love LIFE as the Spirit is in reality, and the aim or goal of that Love is to take LIFE into themselves, to become One with LIFE.

There can be no question that Divine Love is the source of human Love, but the latter must learn to know itself and love itself, and all others, through human relations before it can rise to higher levels of communication with that from which it came. Christ, the

LIGHT, stands for Love divine made manifest in a single Sacrifice, once, and for all – the fundamental fact of our existence, the fact that explains everything else we are involved in. There never would have been an egoism, any “self,” any violence, greed, wrong, or evil but for the necessity of affording Love its opportunity to burst forth in all its splendor and glory. The last in order of time is also that with which time began – the highest to be evolved is also that which was first involved.

LIFE is Love and Truth: Hence the impulse to Create. LIGHT is Love: Hence the impulse to an act of disobedience and Incarnation and Sacrifice in and for the limited and imperfect Life of this Earth, and the slow and painful struggle Upwards to ever fuller and richer modes of Spiritual achievement, until at length the consummation shall be reached wherein all things shall be summed up in Christ, the LIGHT, then, and Love and Truth, and Soul, be All in All.

The Love of the Supreme Spirit is the Love of “Goodness.” In the now archaic Saxon language, the word God is identified with Good. “Don’t call me good,” the master said, “only God is Good.” God – the Good One – personified goodness, then, in many a language. There is in that derivation not a mere play of words – there is a deep

Truth. None Loves LIFE but he or she who loves their neighbor and the good. To love LIFE and LIGHT is to love what they are.

LIFE is pure, and they who love Purity can love LIFE. The Supreme Spirit is True. The Supreme Spirit is Just – and those who love those things out of Spirit may love them in Spirit, and the Spirit in them, because Spirit is Good, and True, Pure, and Just. No other Love is real – none other lasts. The heavens, the earths, may pass away but the Love and Truth of LIFE, and even Life, will Live Forever in the New Worlds.

The Way to “The Way” is to throw ourselves on the eternal Love of the Spirit in the Full Measure of Faith. To do this is to know that there exists a Good and divine end for all in the All in All – “IF”! To know that is to “know” that all which we see, however dark it may be, is education – to “know” the victory of goodness through “good-works,” Justice and Truth, and “knowing it” to throw ourselves on that side, and to “feel” that we are siding with LIFE and LIGHT, and yielding our will and Life into their capable Spirit Guidance. There is no doubt that if we can do this, our pursuit of the “Secret of Life,” and the chaos of the Life we allow ourselves to live in now, will change us. For so our minds will be steadily set towards Right, and will company

the noble things of Justice, Love and Truth, so that, though we are involved in storm after storm here, of feeling and of thought, we shall finally “see” the good, the right, and the trueness of these storms in the education which they give to our Whole Nature.

Knowledge of the spirit’s evolution, shows clearly, that there is not, and cannot be, an outside objective deity who superintends earthquakes, typhoons, hurricanes, explosions, and all the other horrors of the Natural Life, together with all the “providential” escapes, comforts, and pleasures of existence which go to the evil and good alike. The Spirit limits itself in Creation and Re-revelations and only interferes in the Universe through its human and other agents who Act from the Spirit within.

And then we have Love as the Uniter of All, symbolizing the attraction towards the Within instead of the without, and the Uniting of the Opposites.

“Behold the sun warm and bright on all sides, and whatever is immortal and is bathed in its bright ray; and behold the rain-cloud, dark and cold on all sides; from the earths there proceed the foundations of things and solid bodies. In strife all things are endued with form and separate from each other, but they come together in Love and are desirous of each other.” (Empedocles).

Discernment: “Regard the Highest Self as Loving and Wise, both on the Planes Above and the Planes below. Behold all the virtues and all the qualities which endure and living Within It. And understand the outward manifestation of the Supreme Spirit, which appears to the ignorant, suffering lower nature, as inexorable law, dark, obscure, repellent. From the lower nature proceed the foundations of human experience (for the sense-nature is the basis of all that is of utility and beauty to the lower mind). Through “strife” or the struggle for existence on the lower plane (the physical plane) all the lower forms of life subsist in multifarious separateness – as do the forms of Life. But the sense of this separateness is overcome insofar as humans Unite in the Knowledge of their Own Nature, and in Realization of Truth, for Wisdom brings them together in Love, and enables them to live in harmony and mutual service.”

To that degree in which the lower self responds through its vehicles of Consciousness, the Highest Self (Love and Truth) pours forth energy and knowledge and raises the True-Self Upwards – towards its Self – and so the immortal ideals tend to actualize as involution and evolution proceeds. Thus, the natural gives way to the spiritual and the spirit is purified and rises to Life everlasting.

To Know LIFE is to attain to the sublimest conception in the Universe. To Love LIFE is to bind oneself to a being who is fitted, like no other being is, to penetrate and move our Whole being; in Loving LIFE we exalt ourselves and others; in Loving LIFE we Love the great, the good, the right, the true, the beautiful, and the infinite; and under whose influence the physical and the spiritual unfold themselves and follow after the LIGHT. This constitutes the great glory of Christian Spiritualism. It ennobles the True-Self. In this its unrivaled dignity and happiness consist.

One could say then, that only Love is true, vital, wise. As Love grows in you, LIFE grows in you. In your Love you become organic with LIFE. When you are naught but Love you are LIFE's expressed Image - the LIGHT - Christed - Christined, then. Christ, the Eternal LIGHT of LIFE, the First Creation of the Universal Plan (this much we do know), gradually growing Within, rising up in all that is Human here, in Our Wholeness, then, subduing all things unto Itself, bring them into the Psychical Law of Divine Love, which alone is Perfect Freedom.

From all this we can further discern that since Love is the great uniter, it should stand to reason that any and all things that cannot be United at the All in All are to be

counted among the matters that Do Not matter Ultimately, but certainly do matter within the Involution-Evolution cycle. And Love as the great Uniter is, then, the Great Compounder, the Spiritual meaning of Love as Uniter. And in conclusion of this section, we should also mention Fire as Love - the Great Consumer of all that it Engulfs, Embraces, and Touches, then, and TAKES UP into Itself all those matters that Do Matter to the Kingdom of LIFE and the ALL in ALL Happening of the LIGHT.

Most of what you have read up to this point herein is Common Knowledge to all the True Mystics the world over. Why this is so, is simple. A True Mystic never lets-up in his or her quest for Wisdom and the driving force behind this quest is, in every case, the Full Measure of Faith.

True Mysticism, the mystical journey, is a deeply human experience found at all times in human history and in all cultures. The journey itself is like a person lost in the woods and desperately searching for a Way out. This is life, this is the human condition, this is the situation in which we men and women find ourselves - we are lost in the woods and looking for a way out. Think of all these people who are lost as being "blind." Now most of these people are lost in the woods without knowing they are lost. This is the most pitiable condition of all: The condition of the

blind ones who think they “see.” The blind ones who know they are blind and lost have already made progress in their search for a Way out. These are the ones who find the Way out.

You of The Order of Thirteen should consider yourselves in that second group, still lost, but no longer “blind,” and working your way out of the woods – and knowing that you will find The Way. That “knowing” is the mark of a True Christian Spiritualist; a true mystic; a True Spirit Guide in the making.

Now for the sake of illustration and for illumination, place yourself in that vast forest of lost People and then let us center on one of them and his or her search for a Way out.

Suddenly this Person sees a path and this great discovery fills this one with great expectation and joy.

This discovery is the invitation. This is the call. This Person did not put that path there. He or she found it. Perhaps this person had crossed over this path many times in his wanderings without ever having noticed it – but Now, for the first time he “sees” it with his inner eye. It is a gift, then, and being a gift, it must not be shunned or wasted.

And so with this discovery our Person's Life changes. Powerfully motivated, he or she is Now determined to follow that Path even if it costs him his Life. He or she will follow that Path and his inner eye of Love will see that which made the Path which Symbolizes True Wisdom.

The rest of the story describes the journey along that Path with all of its conflicts, barriers, sufferings, and surprises. This need not concern us just now. Only let us say that this Person is Archetypal – he or she represents the True Mystic.

Indeed, this Person following that Path is not unlike the Person who caught a glimpse of the treasure hidden in the field and with great joy gave up everything (and everything means everything) to buy that field. Or like the man who sold everything to buy the great pearl at the very great price. We know what motivated the latter two. The vital question here is what motivated our Person lost in the woods? What was burning in his heart and mind?

We have said that it was love and hope. But putting it into Spiritual language it was the instilling of Faith – the Full Measure of Faith in that Path discovered in the woods. True Mysticism is, after all, the Journey of Absolute Freedom – the deep, dynamic, awe-inspiring search for Freedom. But the Journey is never a solo one and a great

discovery and gift needs always to be Shared.

And so, our Person in the woods invited others to come and see the Path he had discovered and invited them to join in with the following of it to wherever it may lead them. Eventually a small band of Thirteen accepted the invitation and they started off to find the very source of the Path discovered.

So, The 13 set off with their guide, the one who stumbled across the Path, the Way, in that vast forest of the lost. How they will fare along the Way is something we shall have to wait and see. And, of course, we have already seen changes in the make-up of the group making the journey out of the woods and into the Light of Knowledge, Understanding, Intelligence and Love heading towards true Wisdom.

Much of course has and will continue to hinge upon the degrees to which each Person in the group fulfills their own Responsibilities and their Responsibilities to the Family and to The Order as well as how much they, as individuals, and as a group strive to succeed. Desire, devotion, integrity, dedication, trust and discipline are all necessary for the Journey to True Wisdom and these prerequisites, among others, are the Reasons so few have completed the Journey down through the Ages.

There exists from time to time in this little group of Persons lost in the woods fits of anger, spasms of jealousy, selfish visions of power, tremors of doubts, cold naked fears, lacks of trust, and lapses of integrity along with the jockeying for positions, not being content to be only an equal among Equals – all of which makes any real progress along the Way highly improbable.

The facts are that angry and jealous persons cannot function properly simply because they cannot think properly when in these states. Selfish power-hungry persons cannot “see” the Way out of the woods being blinded by their own visions of grandeur. On the other hand, the distrustful, the doubters, the fearful and the untruthful will never leave the woods.

Then, on top of all this, we have the ones who suffer from a “Sincere Delusion Complex,” the ones who actually believe that they are sincere and honest in their adherence to the directives and articles laid down for the benefit of the Well-Being of The Order of Thirteen, but by their very words, Acts, and deeds belie their claims of sincerity.

We have been quite lenient in the past in dealing with these problems within The Order. From now on we will be simply Just per the Presentations and the Articles of The Order of Thirteen. We must get on with the tasks before us,

so irresponsibility on the part of anyone in The Order of Thirteen will no longer be tolerated. The Well-Being of The Order of Thirteen is a Collective Task and each of you are expected to consistently do their part to assure it.

So, we will, as we have said, have to wait and see how The Order of Thirteen fares along its journey to True Wisdom. We know the Potential for success lies in each one of you.

The next question is, what can The Order of Thirteen expect?

You all know that the Truth both Creates and Destroys. Therefore, we can also say that it heals and hurts and I expect that even before you get out of the woods you will see this Truth at work. I sincerely hope I only see the creative and heal sides of it and not the other alternatives. Of course, only you can make this so, and you can do so by Remembering to Remember and by Recognizing “Recognition”! in All you Do.

We have said that the Mystical Spirit Guide Life begins with an invitation and it is an invitation that is repeated many times - “Friend, go up higher.”

Once called the mystic begins his or her journey by following the pathway found in the woods (think of this as

your discovery of the Message of I Paul, the Way to “The Way” and your decision to follow it and to see where it will lead you).

Right off there is conflict. The ones called to see the Pathway in the woods feel compelled to follow it but they also want to remain in the woods. After all they feel they know the forest, it is familiar territory and it holds its sensual joys and materialistic comforts. Why journey out into the unknown, they ask? Even if they tear themselves away from their clinging to the forest and overcome their fears, they will find conflicts every step of the way, according to their Spirit Guide, so why go? they ask. But they do. And once started, this is more or less what each will be confronted with on the path leading them out of the forest.

He (or she) will Always have to keep moving on, leaving what is familiar to enter new areas that are unfamiliar. He may get upset and discouraged and consider quitting as others have. But no, he goes on because of the Goal, the Fellowship and the Friendship, and mostly because he can “hear” the Call of Spirit, of Love, in the distance.

As he starts to leave the forest he begins to “see” through his confusion. What he once thought of as

contradictions now begin to appear as different levels of consciousness, of Awareness, and of expressions, all attempting to bring one Up closer to the Truth, starting at the level of his own perception or that of the others around him.

As he begins to “see” he also begins to change and discovers also that the Way of approaching and even discerning certain matters that do matter are also Changing or being Changed in an Upward direction or flow. He learns that entering the spirit’s terrain is quite pleasant and illuminating once he ceases struggling. He begins to Understand that if he holds onto his negative thoughts, discernments, and barriers of “self,” he restricts the Free Flow of Spirit everywhere. He also perceives that spirit alone isn’t making him more knowledgeable, just less ignorant, and easing his confusion and therefore his burden.

Now when I say he (or she) leaves the forest, don’t take me too literally. After all the forest represents this Earthly Realm with its materialistic comforts and sensual joys. If he is employed in the drywall business he may decide to remain so employed. In this case he will make an inner journey into the unknown. He will travel into ever new states of consciousness, passing through successive

stages of the psyche and moving to wards and upwards to the ground of being where dwells the great mystery which we call the Spirit of LIFE. And in this process, he will be Changed, Radically Changed, in such a Way that he will come to think and feel in a New Way - and begin to see things in a way so different from others, such as those he works with in the drywall business that he finds himself in the midst of conflict and friction once again. Yes, the person who dares embark on this journey is asking for trouble for he may come into conflict not only with those he works with but with others whose path he crosses in the daily task of living his Life. This can be an unsettling experience.

Yet, Follow the Call he must, even when it leads him to leave everything behind, for on this journey one must travel as light as one can, getting rid of superfluous and burdensome paraphernalia. This is actually what Jesus said to his followers in Matthew Ten.

As we have already stated, one may not literally leave these things (just as one need not leave his or her job) but one must learn to live without them and be unafraid to have nothing and give up their mental attachment and physical clinging to materialistic things that do not matter for their own Well-Being and the Well-Being of others.

Non-attachment and self-forgetfulness are the truly main points here. You can hardly Share and Care without them.

This non-attachment and “self-forgetfulness” could be, and have been analyzed in some detail – for our purposes let’s look at two particular aspects of them. The first is to let go of all anxieties. For the Spiritual-Mystical Journey and to be a Practicing Spirit Guide this is a Cardinal Point. For amidst all the useless baggage, the most useless and superfluous things are fear, doubts, anxiety, dishonesty, and the like. So don’t be anxious about your life, what you shall eat or when you shall sleep, or about your body and what you will put on. Be honest in all things and be scrupulously Responsible, and above all things don’t be anxious about the future, the future will look after itself if you look after the Now. And don’t look with anxiety or guilt on your past – what has passed has passed. Let go of those anxieties and Live in the NOW.

Great, beautiful, you may say. Yes, but how very difficult! Difficult because you love your anxieties and your “self,” you must or why would you harbor them, and besides, they are buried deep in your mind and therefore require much more attention and effort to overcome than most are willing to give. Here, consistency in Remembering and Recognizing these anxieties when they

do surface, goes a long way in your effort to overcome them.

Our second point is related to the above and quite practical when you give it some serious thought and that is to give up Thinking – that is to say “discursive” Thinking. Simply Abandon all discursive images and concepts and focus all of your attention on what is good and right for you and yours while you are seeking the Wisdom to determine Absolutely what IS True.

So, the renunciation of discursive Thinking is really only the first step as regards your Thinking as you of The Order of Thirteen are beginning to learn through the Secrets of the Mind Communications.

We know that we never stop thinking, yet there are moments when we are not conscious of our thinking or of any thought or thoughts whatsoever. These moments are what we call Voids or moments of Nothingness. Spirit Guides and Spiritual Mystics know full well that there are moments when one must cling to Nothing and these are induced “Nothings” or “Voids.” The only “secret” here lies in your “Non-Clinging” ability. This is the Ability to Surrender and Abandon completely all Attachments to Thinking, to images, concepts and finally Knowledge of any kind (one does not give up knowledge in these

moments, one simply gives up attachment to knowledge). And this is difficult because all of us naturally desire to know and to use our rational faculties. Yet it is only by Surrendering and then Abandoning our Attainment, our clinging to, that we can enter into the Silence of NO-Thing and the Light of supraconceptuality.

One must not even cling to noble thoughts of God, for these thoughts are not God. In this Life God is the Void, the Nothingness, the cloud of unknowing, the fullness of All things but NO-Thing, Everywhere but No-Where so that God is like nothingness and emptiness and the cloud to us. For no man or woman ever sees God (for those of you who have read the Message of I Paul all of this should be familiar ground).

So, in these “moments” of Nothingness, or attempting to enter such a moment, one must not cling to the joys of spiritual-mystical silence or the warmth of enlightenment or the consolation of passive love.

This renunciation of “clinging” you may view as the negative aspect of this mystical journey, but you must not forget the positive. Let us recall that our person on the Path in the woods having found it, is now being led and drawn by the Power of Love that burns within and the Pillar of Fire that goes ahead to Light the Way. It is precisely this

Love that makes him (or her) relinquish everything in the quest of True Wisdom. What we really have working here now is the Inner Eye and the Full Measure of Faith or Freedom. When these go into Action, we begin to develop a theocentric attitude and our “clinging-to” things and matters that really do not matter begin to vanish.

Eventually, all who follow the Path discovered in the forest come to the realization that there are two major aspects to human growth and human conduct: The Way of Conscious effort and the Way of Non-Action (and, No, we haven't forgotten that Action is the name of the game)! This world is full of non-action people, but these are not what we are referring to herein. Here we are dealing with the Truly Spiritual, the Spirit Guide-Mystic, the True Christian Spiritualist, the Fully Human and the Fully Spiritual – the ones who truly respect the Message of I Paul and those only, who have given up, Abandoned and Surrendered their likes and dislikes and replaced them with a dedication beyond reproach to Follow the Way to The Way regardless of the cost to them personally.

Now, the way of conscious effort is particularly important in the first part of Life and in the pre – spirit guide-mystical part of the journey. Denuded of all frills, it is quite simply the Way of the Person who Thinks, asks

questions, deliberates, weighs the evidence, seeks out the proof, and makes decisions. And whatever those decisions may be you must take the Full Responsibility for them - NO EXCUSES!

Why? Simply because such a Person may turn out to be a Leader (like you of The Order are destined to be) and as such their every decision may build or destroy the lives of many. But more than that they are building or destroying their very own Life. For it is through his decisions that he creates his character and molds his attitude and therefore makes himself for the eternal Now.

Now in addition to the Way of “Conscious Effort” there is another way, less known and less practiced and utilized - another level then, which pertains to the second part, the Spiritually mature part of Life - the Non-Action part which is the most difficult part. Allow me, momentarily, to put it into personal terms for your enlightenment. I have contributed my Conscious Effort and, of course, I will continue to contribute it, but there are moments when I am compelled to accept a level of which I can only state as a “Non-Action” one. Here, with the chaos of this Life all around me, I am less preoccupied with doing things and fooling around with matters that do not matter, and quite simply allowing things to happen (this, at least,

assures me of very little chaos of my own making). Here I am not hell-bent on making all the decisions and therefore I am much more capable in allowing the decisions that really count to well up from the very depths and heights of my total, my Whole being (this is also, of course, if you didn't catch it, the "Sitting to Receive" stage, the "non-me-active" level, or to you the "Non-Action" stage). This is to me the passive love, the quiet patience and the honest trust stage or level of Non-Action.

So, there is another Way, that of Non-Action, and this pertains usually (but by no means exclusively) to the second part of Life or the spirit side of Life. Here I am less preoccupied with doing things and more able to let things happen, less intent on making decisions and more able to allow the true decisions to well up from the depths and heights of my being.

You see when you and I were young, particularly when we were babes in the things and matters of the spirit, we walked around in the woods with a conscious materialistic effort, but when we learned to listen, we matured, and now we are carried and guided along the Path of Physical Action and what we can, at best, cite as Non-Action.

Now my dear Sisters and Brothers I do not want to leave you with the wrong impression, nor lead you astray

by what we mean by Non-Action, because the very term itself can be easily misunderstood and could therefore lead you off the Path of the Way to “The Way.” For this very reason and to avoid any misunderstanding we could emphasize the Active dimension of this whole process of Non-Action by calling it non-interference or active inaction or, quite simply, Creative Quietude. Personally, I prefer to call it “doing Nothing,” and this is fine provided that you understand and remember that while you or I are “doing Nothing,” a deeper force within us is Doing Something or, better still, is “doing everything”! And, most importantly, you are “listening.”

Now, remembering that this is something you practice as just one facet of your Whole Life’s Activity, think of this Non-Action process as the great and patient art of Letting Things Happen in one’s psyche and in the World around you. Simply let what will happen happen, and get out of the Way of it mentally (interference-wise) and allow the Spirit to operate freely – and it will if you have Prepared yourself properly because the Results are guaranteed!

The True Mystic, the Practicing Spirit Guide, is the one who can let the spirit act without putting any impediment in its way. This also means that one can follow their deepest Spiritual Instincts and Intuitions in their daily

routine Life without breaking any of the Rules of Conduct expected of a Practicing Spirit Guide.

There is some of this “Non-Action” in Lucid Dreams and in our meditations wherein we attempt to leave the body and to Transcend.

In meditation we either listen to a single sound, or look at a single color or recite orally, or mentally, a mantra and in this way, we bind the discursive intellect in such a way that the deeper powers within us are free to work. These Spiritual Forces are a source of Creativity for both our human and spiritual potential. The Principle is simply that we can learn the great art of doing Nothing, of letting things happen, of not placing barriers in the way, then the forces of the spirit and of nature will act powerfully and graciously in the Universe and in human Life.

It should be clear to all of you Now that this process of “Non-Action” is of cardinal importance to those embarked on the Spiritual-Mystical Journey. Beginners, of course, will ordinarily meditate according to the way of Conscious Effort. That is to say, they will think about the Message of I Paul or they will pray to God with great devotion or they will repeat a mantra with great effort or make all sorts of promises to do good-works; but there comes a time when they must cease from discursive meditation and Active

Effort in order that these Realities which lie deeper in the psyche may begin to Speak. In other words, they must pass from Conscious Effort to Non-Action – they must let the Spirit Act, they must not place obstacles in the Way of the True-Self or the Spirits attempting to be heard. This means that they pass from Action to a Non-Action, which is paradoxically a New Level of even more Powerful Action.

Practically, this involves the Abandonment of Reasoning, and forced Thinking and of any effort, then, whatsoever. Let things happen! Let the Spirit Act! So be still, remain quiet, and hear and know! This is total Surrender, then, also.

Here is where you need to Create an Attitude conducive to the Non-Action process. This needed Attitude is to pay no attention to discursive meditation or Thinking for this is not the time for such Actions (in the Non-Action process that is). Allow the total physical body to rest and attempt to maintain an attitude of complete quiet and non-thinking (thinking about nothing in particular). As the Message has stated repeatedly, this is a time for great patience and perseverance and through these even though you are as inactive as possible, the Spirit will not be. What is required of you here is Freedom for the Spirit within to Act without your interference! To do this you need to

liberate yourself from all impediments of action, of ideas, of thoughts, of fatigues of any ilk, and be content to maintain a quiet, loving and peaceful attitude without concern and simply allow things to happen.

And I will not try to persuade you that it is easy. It is not, it is difficult, and it takes practice, lots of practice with lots of patience. Many who have tried this Non-Action process have felt foolish or that they were wasting valuable time or that they would be better off in pursuing Conscious Effort - but they were wrong - there is a time for everything just as there is a place for everything.

This state of Non-Action is sometimes called passive, but if you don't like that term call it what you will, but whatever you call it, if you practice it, it grows. And as it grows you may get the feeling of becoming more and more helpless and of being Abandoned. Don't let this get you down though, just love and above all else trust - it will work itself out if you let it! As you listen, wait, and do nothing else, sooner or later you will become Aware of Another's Presence in the emptiness, the darkness, the obscurity of the Nothingness created by your Non-Action. Even when you become Aware, Alert to this "Other" presence you must maintain your Attitude of Non-Action and Allow the Presence to Act or "Talk" - you listen!

The fact is, that in giving up discursive thinking and reasoning, in letting go of these anxieties, you are placing yourself in Full Presence to the Spirit and to its Love and Truth. And isn't that the main purpose of your Life? The important thing is that we Surrender to this Love and Truth and allow it to envelop our Life.

But this is not easy. Even Paul fought and kicked and struggled against the goad. The problem was that he did not recognize Love and Truth when he encountered it – he was too deep into tradition, into old preconceived ideas and the conscious effort they demanded of him. And so he fights and begs to be delivered from the sting of the flesh that torments him, until the Answer comes, “My grace is sufficient for you for my power is made perfect in weakness.” It is precisely when we are beaten down and helpless and weak, that the deepest power within us, the Real Power of endless Love and eternal Truth wells up within us. Paul now understands this, and with great joy he writes this to the Corinthian Family:

“For the Sake of Christ, I am content with weakness, insults, hardships, persecutions, and calamities; for when I am weak, then I am strong.”

Yes, when Paul is weak the Power of LIGHT begins to act in him. And since Paul, this has been true in many a

True Christian Spiritualist, not to mention True Mystics and Spirit Guides.

And this Power surfaces mysteriously in those who walk the Path Faithfully. It comes precisely when needed, when their well-being collapses, their work fails, or their reputation is being attacked and so forth.

When I am weak, then I am strong. Something analogous appears in a journey of the disciples to which I have already made reference. It is precisely when they have no gold or silver or copper in their purse, when they are rejected by men and persecuted, when they give up reasoning and thinking and anxiety about what they will say – it is precisely then that the Spirit Rises Up and speaks within them – for what you are to say will be given to you in that hour, for it is not you who speak, but the Spirit speaking through you. Here Non-Action reaches a powerful climax of Spirit Action.

I have been trying to describe the Journey of a Spirit Guide, Mystic, Servant Slave of the LIGHT and to show the Two Sides of the Trip, the Action of the Spirit Guide Servant and the Non-Action side of the Mystic Servant Slave. And, in following the Message of I Paul and the Communications of The Order of Thirteen given up to this moment, we can see that it is quite a Journey. It is a journey

on the Path to Wisdom, the Truth and a journey of one who is in love without restrictions or reservations, who has an unquenchable thirst and goes on and on and on as he or she searches for the New World outside of the forest. It is a trip that has its joys, its conflicts, its falls, its disappointments, its beauties, its compromises, its temptations, and its neuroses – for this love is not Perfect love even though it is the most human of human loves.

On the mystical part of this journey, as I have said, it is much more important to receive love than to love, much more important to be loved than to love. This is Non-Action in a mystical setting, then. It is the situation of one who tries, really tries, to drop his defenses and his clinging and his selfishness so that this immense Love may inundate his whole person and take over his life. And when this happens the love with which he loves others is not his own but the divine Love which is a Gift. Only such Love can go out to one's enemies as to one's friends, only such Love can go out sincerely and authentically to the poor, to the needy, to the sick, to the underprivileged, the imprisoned, the lonely and the Spiritually ignorant. This is Real Caring and Sharing – it is a Gift, yes, but it is also an Exercise in Effort – your acknowledgment of the Gift!

And, of course, we fight against this Love. And no

wonder. Because it transforms us, changes us into another person – and we don't like to be Changed – “self” hates Change, and we like to stay where we are – lost in the woods. Because to be Changed is to die and rise – this great Love kills in order to give Life – this great Truth, then, Destroys and Creates!

Now the question is: In what way does it Change us? It's a Profound Change and one long promised by the Message of I Paul, by Christian Spiritualism and its earliest adherents who themselves where Changed. Paul told us that we need to die to ourselves in order to live to Christ, The LIGHT. Jesus is quoted as saying in a gospel, “Truly, Truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains alone, but if it dies it bears much fruit. He who loves his life loses it, and he who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life.” And so, we must lose our own center, our “self,” to fall into that deeper center which is the True-Self and the LIGHT of God which lives in us. When this happens, we can say with Paul: “It is no longer I who live, but Christ who lives in me...” Christian Spiritual Mysticism is a transformation into Christ, then, and a Christian Spiritual Practicing Spirit Guide is a partial transformation into our True-Selves by Acting Natural. This, then, is what the Path in the forest leads to and the Journey on the Way to “The Way” is well

worth the Effort. Wouldn't you agree?

And there you have the Two Parts of your Life spelled out for you - the Action and the Non-Action, the Spirit Guide and the Mystic - from the Book of the Two Ways this is the Way to Wisdom.

Now we need to say something here about "Nothingness," the high-level result of Non-Action.

The Message speaks of many different levels of consciousness, the deepest of which is a trance state in which the lower mind is gradually swept clean of all images and thoughts and subject-object relationships. This is an intense form of a pure undifferentiated consciousness which is usually called "Nothingness" or "emptiness." In the Sanskrit it is called "Sunyata" (voidness-nothingness). But this "voidness," this "nothingness" never means the death of all Things or Absolute Negation. It has a Positive Connotation.

And the Process of Non-Action for us also has a positive connotation. Whether you call this positive attitude process "Non-Action," "Nothingness," "Non-Self," "emptiness," "voidness," or "no-mind" is not important - the mental state of those who practice it is what is important. It is the mental state of one who can submerge his ego and his little illusionary "self" in order

that the forces of Life may begin to work – take over from within, then. (Since most of you won't or can't slay “self” through the Conscious Effort process then this Non-Action process is probably your last resort to do so.) The lower mind is emptied of Reasoning and Thinking, then, of all sense of subject and object, in order that the Life Force which is centered within you may rise up – and it will rise up if you let it, giving extraordinary Power to the person who has (will) mastered this process of Non-Action and non- “self.”

The person of non- “self” can “see” with the Inner Eye and can, therefore, act accordingly to what it is he or she “sees” in this Non-Action Process.

Here, in this trance state or trance-sleep and dreamless state, you gather as a mystic, Wisdom, to be utilized in your Conscious Effort State as a Spirit Guide. But while the “self” remains, enlightenment will not come. It is when the illusory “self” dies that the True-Self is “born” and the Inner-Eye Awakens Totally and Comes to “See” what Wisdom has to say!

In the Book of The Two Ways, the “self” is called “the barrier without openings” so there is no way you can pass through it to enlightenment and leave it intact behind you – it must be destroyed. Those who have successfully

destroyed the barrier will not only see the Light but will go hand in hand with all the Masters of the Past and see them face to face. You will see with the same eye They see with and hear with the same ear They hear with. Wouldn't this be great? Then the Barrier must go. You must force your whole being into the quest without fail and without any letting up. Day and night work intently at it. Do not attempt to rationalize or intellectualize in favor of "self" in order to justify its actions (this is a trap everyone falls into and with most people it is a well-established bad habit and so automatic they are practically unaware of it). Cast away your illusions and keep on working harder until they are gone.

After a while, if you persevere, your efforts will come to fruition and for a bit you will be like a dumb person who has had a marvelous dream: you only know it personally, within yourself. Then, suddenly, you break through, the barriers are gone, you are elated at your Freedom and the Kingdom is astonished as you shake the World loose and enter the higher levels of Consciousness.

Now that moment of "dumbness" is the "emptiness" the release from the darkness leading into the light. And with the Light comes the Knowledge that there is a way out. And this Way Out is through enlightenment or actually

a series of enlightenments culminating in the supreme experience of a Transcendence. This enlightenment is an experience of joy, liberation and release from all anxiety. The Book of The Two Ways which I have quoted many times speaks of the fearlessness and joy of the one who has realized and attained to the heights of the House of Wisdom.

It is well known in all the Spiritual-Mystical circles that there comes a time when one is liberated from “fear” and “self” and knows at once that All is Well. It is here that the Light shines in the darkness and the darkness cannot overcome it. And then it is that you come to the realization that you are that Light. In the Book of the Two Ways this is known as completing the cycle or “the return to the source” and it is the story of the eternal return. Every Spiritual Mystic knows that when he starts out on a journey he will eventually return to his starting point. In the same way our person in the woods who found the Path and went in search of Wisdom will, when the conflict and turmoil and ecstasy is over, return to himself - becomes his true-self, very natural, very ordinary. Once again flowers are flowers, stars are stars, and Life goes on - but with one exception, one step further. He returns to the Woods with great compassion to Share and Care with all those who are still lost. In other words, Now as a Spirit Guide he returns

to “Action”! Now he is the True Practicing Spirit Guide, True Spiritual Mystic, True Servant and True Slave to the Power and the Wisdom of LIFE, the LIGHT. Thus, here our person in the woods has come full circle – he has returned from whence he began in this world. The “next journey” and the next “returning to the source” is obvious! But before that last Journey he needs to fulfill his task as an Ambassador of and for the LIGHT.

Now in concluding this section on the mystical process of “Non-Action” with its seemingly negative terms used to express it – such terms as “emptiness,” “voidness,” “nothingness” – is it possible that we can connect such terms to the Supreme Spirit itself, and if so, how?

The Message affirms that the Supreme Spirit is Everything. The Supreme Spirit is Light, is Fullness, is All. The Supreme Spirit is the source of being. In this the Supreme Spirit would seem to be the very opposite of the “nothingness” that Spiritual Mysticism speaks. But (and here again we come up against great paradox) while the Supreme Spirit is Light in Itself, It is darkness to us; while the Supreme Spirit is ALL in Itself, It is Nothing to us; while the Supreme Spirit is Fullness in Itself, it is emptiness to us; now we are not saying here that the Supreme Spirit is darkness, is nothingness, is emptiness,

but that the human experience of the Supreme Spirit is darkness and emptiness and nothingness. For the Supreme Spirit, God, LIFE then, is like Night to the human being.

And this is not speculation, this is no theory (read “Is There A God?”). In the Spiritual Mystical process, one enters into the void, into a cloud of unknowing which seems like nothingness. In fact, at times the nothingness becomes so extreme, so dark, that one feels abandoned by spirit – left high and dry by or with spirit absent. Yet, if one is Patient in emptiness (and darkness simulates emptiness) one comes to Realize that the void is Spirit: it is not a preparatory stage at all but the actual experience of Spirit itself. And in this moment of discovery, this period of enlightenment one could exclaim, “Spirit was present all the time but I did not recognize it. I thought it was nothing and darkness but it was Light and All. It is not that the darkness has gone away but that I come to “see” in the dark and have come to love the darkness.”

As the Light blinded Paul and as excessive sunlight blinds the human eye, so the excessive Light of Spirit can plunge us into darkness. And the Supreme Spirit is always approached in darkness and emptiness and nothingness simply because the Supreme Spirit is the mystery of Mysteries, far above anything the human eye can see or the

Lower Mind correctly imagine and far beyond anything that can be conveyed in words. No one has ever seen the Supreme Spirit.

That the Supreme Spirit is mystery, unknowable, ineffable, unlike anything made by human hands or human imagination is, of course, indisputable. In 2 Chronicles it states, “The Lord hath said he would dwell in the thick darkness.” And so, it is into this “thick darkness,” this void, this emptiness, this nothingness we must traverse in order to approach the Supreme Spirit. In fact, we must traverse through the darkness in order to approach any Spirit.

And what does the renunciation of all clinging and craving mean to a Spiritual Mystic? And if you would honestly examine yourself you would see that you do crave and cling to many, many things that block the mystical process, the Journey to Wisdom. No gold, no silver, no copper in your purse, no suitcase for your journey, no two cents, no sandals, no staff. In fact, you have to bury everything beneath a mound of self-forgetting. Yet you must remember that this Nothingness is not the renunciation of all things but the renunciation of clinging to all things. We do this in order to establish Need in our lives over wants and then we can truly love these things we

Need as they are in themselves and without projections. Once liberated from self-centered clinging and craving we can enjoy the Freedom and Joy of a Job and we can, with another Spiritual Mystic, John of the Cross, exclaim, “Now that I least desire them, I have them All without desire.” You and I would be hard pressed to find any Asceticism or Sacrifice here. But no trouble in seeing what it means to live in two different worlds at the same time or to be Fully Human and Fully Spiritual in the NOW!

I have them All! Nothing is renounced. It is the Mystic who truly Loves Life and Loves People and Loves the Cosmos and Finds the good and enjoys all that is beautiful in the Universe. He loves all but is the slave to Nothing of or on the earth. This is the Real, the Factual, the True Freedom, the Full Measure of Faith that we have written about and you have been seeking. And all of this comes about via a complete transformation in a way of Thinking, the renunciation then of discursive thinking and the entering into the temporary void of No Thinking at all. I, Paul enters this void of Nothingness and Non-Thinking every time I receive from Spirit, so it is not an impossibility nor unusual. The all-important thing to remember is that this journey is in answer to a call, an invitation and is made under the influence of grace and the constant guidance of Spirit. Not one step is made except by the power of the

same Spirit and this is why we must be perfect listeners. This is The Way of One who has found the Path in the Woods or seen the treasure hidden in the field and sells everything joyfully to follow the Path or buy the field. Think that out carefully and to its extremes for it is the renunciation of one who has heard the “voice” of Spirit!

It must be remembered that in the spiritual mystical process of Non-Action you don't need to make any violent efforts because the power of love and the power of spirit within is gradually and gently detaching you from all things, from all people, so that you may be attached to these same things and these same people in a true and nobler way by being Fully Human and Fully Spiritual.

To reach satisfaction in all, desire its possession in nothing. To come to possess all desire the possession of nothing. To arrive at being all, desire to be nothing. To come to the knowledge of all, desire the knowledge of nothing. Only a Spiritual Mystic will understand this and know how to follow this. As Paul once wrote Foolishness is Wisdom, “For the Foolishness of Spirit is wiser than men.” One must follow their deepest spiritual instincts to “see” and “hear” the Truth of all of this.

So, we have described the mystical journey in negative terms but we hope we have made it clear enough for all of

you that the Journey itself is not negative nor is it Life-denying. It is a love-filled journey towards union with the All, a journey that can be described by all sorts of symbols and metaphors and figures of speech which we have covered pretty thoroughly.

And it is not Life-denying. Let us explain: It's no disgrace to have negatives in one's Life, we all have them. What is disgraceful and very harmful to us all is to allow them to dominate our Life. Naturally, the most important thing we have on this Earth is our Life. And you only have this Life once so it is imperative that you make the most of it and get the most out of it in terms of happiness, prosperity, joy, and well-being. That's your overall Well-Being here which you work for without damaging the Well-Being of others. Along with all of this, some of this Life should be directed towards the Life after the Life here ends. In other words, your Well-Being "here" ought to be tied solidly into your future Well-Being "there." And this is actually what the Message of I Paul is attempting to impress upon you and lead you into - Your total Well-Being on an eternal Now basis. So, the journey is not a Life-denying journey and it is a love-filled one. You see, Love is also an Attitude and a behavior - it is not something you fall into like a hole in the ground. The way in which we believe, the way in which we Live out that

belief, and the way in which we Love is going to determine our happiness and our overall well-being of body, mind, and spirit. The Flow of Love, Compassion and Feeling between spirit and us and between us and others are the beginnings of Fellowship and of healings. And here Unity is a great key - we are part of each other and we are part of the Cosmic body - the micro is the macro and vice-versa - we are all tied to a much greater beauty, power, and glory than just our physical selves and we can reach out and use these if we will but try.

So, if you do understand us you can “see” that the Journey of a Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave to the LIGHT of LIFE is a journey of a deep seated Love and is not Life-Denying, not negative then but a very Positive Journey, a journey under grace and Grace, Jesse tells us, is the Self-Communication of LIFE.

So, let us Celebrate LIFE and LIGHT and in that Celebration let us also Celebrate Life and enjoy it and have it more Abundantly - Be happy - sadness and sorrow do not belong to us - there is no Freedom in them. Love and Trust and Respect each other for without these sincere actions you cannot fulfill The Order's goal of being an equal among Equals.

None of you need me to tell you if you have Order in

your Life, if you have developed self-discipline in your Life, if you are truly living up to all of the Responsibilities in your Life that are clearly your Responsibilities. Are you exerting the Full Effort in all these areas is a question you must ask yourself and then honestly answer it and if that answer is no then you must make the Changes necessary to turn that negative into a positive. In order to Love and Trust and Respect others you must first, actually, and with good reason, Love and Trust and Respect yourself and display via your words, acts and deeds why others should Trust and Respect you in turn.

It would be terribly wrong and untruthful for me as the Spirit Guide of The Order of Thirteen to say to all of you that All is Well in The Order. All is not well and those who are not well, Order Wise, are aware of this and I need not name them. My task is not to shame anyone or to get into personalities. I believe though the time has come for The Order of Thirteen to discipline itself from within, and if this fails then it will have to be disciplined from without. All of you know what is expected of and from you – “get with it” is my advice and if I, Paul can assist you in any way please do not hesitate to ask me, or your brothers and sisters in The Order of Thirteen to help you, because, hopefully, they are all quite willing to Share and Care with you and get you on the Way to “The Way.”

Yet I caution all of you and ask you to remember that Sharing and Caring is a two-way street and we are not obligated to help those who will not exert the effort to help themselves. There is an Ordinance called the Law of Formative Causation and also an Ordinance of Reciprocity that stick out here.

Now we come to the most Important section of this Lesson - The Mind.

When Paul was putting his little group together, he said to one of them (which, of course, applied to all) “For God has not given us the Spirit of Fear; but of Power, and of Love, and of a sound mind.” And to the Roman Family in Rome he said, “And be not conformed to this world; but be you transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what it is that is good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.” And then to this same group he said, “Be of the same mind one toward another, mind not high things, but condescend to those of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.” And to the Corinthians he said, “Now I beseech you brethren, by the Name of Christ-Jesus, that you all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that you be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgement.” Paul also said to others, “Fulfill you my joy, that you be like

mind, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.” And, “Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ-Jesus.” From these few selected sayings of Paul we can see that the mind was of great importance to Paul and to his teachings. After the Cross, One-Mindedness was the theme of his gospel. Yet, to this very day, few really understand just what it was Paul meant by “the mind” and One-Mindedness. To Paul, one-mindedness meant much more than simple agreement on something or some issue. Let us explore this together and at the risk of some repetition I, Paul ask for your Patience and your Full Attention to see if we can come to One-Mindedness on the mind and the multiplicities or essences of the One Mind.

We Christian Spiritualists with a Full Measure of Faith believe there is One Supreme Source for the Universe, One Supreme Mind, One Supreme Power, and One Supreme Presence, and we Understand this ONE as the Supreme Spirit, God, or “LIFE,” then, the latter being the correct title Spiritual wise. We further understand that from this ONE emanates all that ever was, is and can ever be and that this One is “All” and will be ALL in ALL through a Spiritual Process of Involution-Evolution and that this constitutes the mystery of All Mysteries – LIFE IS and WE are Life and that Grace is the Self-Communication of LIFE to Life through the LIGHT.

Furthermore, we understand this Life to be “trinitarian” i.e., consisting of body, mind, spirit (Whenever we use the term “spirit” we also mean the spirit mind, such as: body <---> mind <---> spirit.), which constitute the Wholeness or Oneness of Human Life here in the Physical-Material Realm of Creative Involution-Evolution. Both the Mind (the lower and higher essences of the One Mind) and the spirit are immortal, divine, then (There is a physical body and there is a spirit body and essences of the ONE MIND).

Now with this background let us explain to you in diverse ways this ONE Spirit and this One Mind and the Essences of them:

The Soul or the Spirit of Consciousness (Omniscience) comes, emanates then, from and is God, LIFE, then. The Soul sends out (mind-spirit involution) and Wisdom calls back (mind-spirit evolution).

Since God is no Respecter of Persons and there is no physical body resurrection in our future, we have to conclude that Wisdom (the Christ or the LIGHT, then, the Power and Wisdom of God, or LIFE, then) is not summoning our physical-material being back to an ALL in ALL “Happening” but is summoning our True-Self back, our spirit self, then.

Yet what we cite as our “Physical Consciousness” (the lower mind actually) is Totally involved in this “calling back” for it is the lower essence of the higher essence of Consciousness which is being called back, i.e., our spirit and its essence of Consciousness (the higher mind actually). Both the lower and the higher mind then are essences of the Highest Mind, the Soul or the Spirit of Consciousness, God, LIFE, then, Its Omniscience.

Now let us explain this further: There is a physical body and there is a spiritual body. And each have their own essence of mind which emanate from the ONE MIND. These three elements then of body-mind-spirit make up our Wholeness as Human Beings. In other words, there is only One Mind but a multiplicity of minds or Essences of this One Mind.

Let us put this in another way by adding the Mind of Christ, i.e., God’s Will, which we all have access to: There is a physical body or vessel and with this physical body or vessel there is an essence of mind known to us as the lower mind and a spirit body, our True-Self. So, this physical body, this essence of mind, and this spirit are what constitute our wholeness or oneness as a Human Being here on this Earth.

Now this spirit, our True-Self, is also a body, an

immaterial body, and it too has an essence of mind called the higher mind and with this spirit there is also the Mind of Christ, the Will that Wills above all Wills, God's Will, i.e., the Well-Being of All in All. Our True-Self is also our Conscience, the still small "voice" (via thought transference) that attempts to persuade us to ward the good, the right, and the true; our knowledge of Right and Wrong then. The opposite of this in the human being is the "Volition" which the Mind of Christ is eternally attempting to persuade to obey the Will of God and Abide the Soul or the Spirit of Consciousness in All Things in and of the Eternal Now.

Now at the moment of the physical body's demise the two essences of Consciousness, the so-called lower and higher minds unite and become one, incorporated in and compounded as the Spirit, our True-Self, and the process of the spirit's evolution begins Upwards through the higher plane levels of existence and Consciousness out of the Earth Plane levels unless one is caught up in earthboundedness. The physical body or vessel is no longer viable or useful having completed its purpose and its cycle in our whole Life scheme. We now Live as Spirit and mind, to continue our quest for the Happening of the ALL in ALL of the Soul. To be ONE, then.

Now if you're still with me on all of this let me say this: We have what we will call or cite as a dualist anthropology - man-woman, male-female, composed of two elements: one corporeal, extinguished by death, the other immaterial, which survives death and these are known to us as the physical body and the spiritual body. These are not what we call "The Mysteries." The Mystery here is "The Mind" that serves these two "bodies," one of which is mortal and one immortal. The Mind is the Mystery and the essences that emanate from the One Mind are "The Mysteries." The ONE Mind of course being the Soul or the Spirit of Consciousness which we also know as "Omniscience," the First Cause, the Source of ALL, the Supreme Spirit, God, or LIFE, then, to us.

So, there is an element in us (spirit) that survives and matter that perishes and the Bond between these two elements is the Mind - the Lower mind essence of the physical element and the Higher mind essence of the spiritual element with both being essences that emanate from the ONE MIND.

This Common Bond of the ONE mind and the One Will, the Catalyst of the Mind of Christ, between the Physical and Spiritual elements which constitute our wholeness here, rule out any and all Spiritual Differences (such as

those manufactured by or imagined by man) between all Human Beings – we are all spirits inhabiting a body (Age, sex, race, religion, social condition or way of Life holds no weight in the Kingdom of God. With LIFE there are no elect and no damned, only degrees of Light in the Future Life).

Therefore, the true Spiritual Life should be the goal of all human beings on this earth – not only for the Future Life in the Kingdom of LIFE but in our Life of the Now, the Eternal NOW of the Spirit and the Mind that binds us all together as brothers and sisters, yesterday, today and tomorrow, as the Children of the Supreme Spirit and heirs to the Kingdom of LIFE with the LIGHT.

Therefore, we True Christian Spiritualists of The Order of Thirteen and of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT are fully committed to accentuate the teaching and mission and Life of Jesus, physically and spiritually, in our own Life and to hold to no concept of, nor belief in this world's religions created by man. In fact, all organized religion will always be subordinated by pure and true Spiritualism simply because God is Spirit, not a religion, and those who wish to glorify and worship God, must do so in Spirit and in truth. No religion totally fulfills either of these two requisites faithfully or purely. One such example of this is the Religionist Christian use of the term Lord. When the

religionists say Jesus is Lord, they mean that Jesus is God.

In Christian Spiritualism we view our Christ quite differently and the Message of I Paul fully covers this. Here I will only add what is necessary for you to know as Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave to the LIGHT of LIFE.

In the Jesus-Paul era the contemporary usage of the term “Kyrios” (Greek = lord) denoted the relation of the slave to the master. In True Christian Spiritualism and especially now in The Order of Thirteen, its usage denotes the essential and specific relationship between you the servant slave of Christ and the Christ itself. The LIGHT then is to be the Collective Conscious of The Order and eventually that of All Spirits participating in the Happening of the ALL in ALL. The LIGHT then is our Protector, not our Salvation as the religionists have it.

When you as a Servant Slave of the LIGHT exert the effort called for you have the protection of the master. That’s the primary Result of all the Results you leave to “others.”

Lower minded wise we have faith in Jesus’ humanity, in his teachings, in his discovery, in his goal and in the uniqueness of his Life, a uniqueness we are attempting to instill in our Wholeness of Life. As Christian Spiritualists

our initial trust lies with Jesus, in what he said, commanded and did as explained in the Message of I Paul.

Jesus then is the model, example, and guaranty for our living up to the Way to “The Way” and getting to where he is from here. This is how we get to where we are not from where we are at the moment – by living out Jesus’ Life, the Way, for him in the Now. This Following is the power of our Life and wisdom the means of radiating it. And from all of this Lesson Thirteen the “Prepare, Follow, Come” of the Message of I Paul should be much clearer now to you of The Order of Thirteen.

You must learn to externalize positively your internal call for Action.

And this leads us once again to our Person in the woods who answered the Call and set off in search for Wisdom. I would like to conclude the lesson by putting that search into another set of symbols for your enlightenment. And I want very much for you of The Order of Thirteen to keep in mind that you as an Order are destined to be the bright lights in a dark world, the salt of the earth and harbingers of the New Worlds. And until you can all set your minds and become enthusiastically One-minded on this The Order of Thirteen is simply not going to be able to operate as an Order and Do what it is Now, and will be

called on to Do in the Future. Supererogation means that you will Do extra-ordinary things in both ordinary and extraordinary situations.

So, we repeat: “You must learn to externalize positively your internal call for Action.” If you are now a Spiritual you will hear and heed the voice that is calling you to be a Practicing Spirit Guide, i.e., a Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave to the LIGHT of LIFE.

Of course, if you are spiritually dead then you cannot hear the Call. And just what do we mean by this term “spiritually dead”? If you are spiritually dead it doesn’t mean that You is dead, your true-self that is, but that the physical you, lower minded wise, is spiritually dead – dead to the needs of your True-Self; dead to your Conscience; and dead to the Mind of Christ and the Way to “The Way.”

Obviously, our person in the woods was not spiritually dead for he heard the call and heeded same. The point now is what did he hear and what does the hearing lead to?

First of all, let us recall that if we are inwardly divided this is due mostly because of the split between our Conscious and the unconscious mind. I say unconscious mind but as I, Paul has already taught us, strictly speaking there is absolutely nothing unconscious in the psyche or about the essences of the Lower or Higher minds. What

exists are higher and lower “voices” which ought to sing the only song there is in a great polyphony. Yet what should be polyphonic is usually a chaotic cacophony in that the higher “voices” lead in one direction and the lower in another (wherever “self” is there is chaos). The higher “voices” follow a plan and desire one thing and the lower “voices” lag behind desiring only carnal things. While the higher mind desires Peace and Unity the lower distorted mind in “self” opts for anger or hate and their discord and separation. While the higher mind desires the Light, the lower insists on remaining in the darkness. And at the very center of our Whole Being lies the greatest “voice” of all, the Mind of Christ, and most often we either ignore this voice or we cannot hear it or distinguish it from the other “voices” due to all the chaos, the cacophony we allow due to our lack of Order and self-discipline in our daily Life.

The healing of this division and disorder begins with the Call of Love at the very center of our being and it does something to us – something we cannot put our finger on at the moment for this is the Call of the Spirit – a Call most of us never expect and of which we are mostly unprepared for. This Call may be as profound and clear as mine was or it may be obscure and faintly heard, depending on one’s state of mind at the time. But it is the “voice” of the Spirit Calling whether it be through an obscure or clear sense of

presence or a sudden longing for solitude. But regardless of how the Call comes it is Always the Call of Love seeking Union.

Hearing this Call, we begin the inner journey with much joy because it is filled with Love but it has its pain too because we must leave the familiar and journey into that which is unfamiliar to us. We are now entering into areas of the mind which are ordinarily dormant and unknown to us – areas, then, to us, of which we have heretofore been unconscious of. It should be clear to us now that we have finally broken through into another level of consciousness, a higher plane of Awareness where we Now begin to truly “see” and “hear,” even if only dimly.

So, we pass from one level of Consciousness which enjoys one set of things to a state of Consciousness which values another set of things – we now begin to leave those matters alone that truly do not matter! This is a clue that your Call is a true-calling and not one of “self”!

Now we find “listening” to the deeper voices easier and our Inner Eye which was formerly asleep is now becoming Activated within us. Consequently, profound changes begin to take place – we begin to see things differently and to treat ourselves, our Responsibilities and others, differently – we are beginning to mature, to

become more human and more spiritual daily as our petty and selfish “likes and dislikes” begin to fade away and now others are beginning to notice the Change in us also.

At times you may wonder whether you are being charmed or being tricked and you go around unsettled by what you see and hear. Everything seems strange to you although you feel the same as always. Then you begin to catch on and “see” that you are being made a stranger to your usual knowledge and experience of things. In all this process you are growing and maturing and your Awareness is being expounded and deepened. You sense now that you are actually becoming more Yourself – your True-Self than ever before and the most profound areas of your mind are being actuated and brought to fruition. Now you can really feel the Unity settling into your deepest recesses of soma, psyche, pneuma.

Yet conflicts still arise – “self” is still around and also due to the fact that the course of true love never runs smoothly. On the one hand you cling to what is familiar and dread the journey to what is unfamiliar like the person who wants to follow the path out yet still wants to enjoy the pleasures of the forest. But more than this, as new levels of the psyche are opened you come to see that not everything in your mind is beautiful, good, right or true –

ugly things are revealed, things about yourself which you have ignored and always rationalized but now they shock and dismay you and you prefer not to face them nor honestly deal with them. Your one concern is how do you get out of this? The answer, of course, is that you cannot – not if you truly desire to be a Practicing Spirit Guide. And, of course, this is the whole reason for your being in The Order of Thirteen in the first place.

The question now is, Do you honestly, truly and sincerely want to be a Practicing Spirit Guide, i.e., a Spirit Guide, Mystic, Ambassador, Servant, Slave of the LIGHT of LIFE? If you say yes let me inform you that you cannot get there from where you actually are now unless you incorporate some major changes in your whole Attitude on Life in general and about the Way to “The Way.” We will get to these changes in a moment and the need for them.

So, as we said, ugly things do surface and get revealed, and great storms do arise that can shake you to the very roots of your being. One can be overwhelmed and become mindless by gusts of temper and anger or by nameless anxiety, doubt and fear, or by a burning lack of veracity or a terrible rebellion against the Mind of Christ and therefore against your fellow human beings and you begin to fall apart and to feel that you have been forsaken and

forgotten. Now is the moment when your “self” takes over and all of your stupidity and crazinesses surface in an intensified form and your distorted mind turns into a reprobate one and you are lost and begin to feel sorry for yourself and begin to defend yourself in areas that are totally indefensible and a real war begins between you and You. The problem with this is that you take out your misery and your stupidity on others instead of yourself, where it belongs! Now you are not only not spiritual but you are even sub-par of being human and you know it. It’s not a pretty picture you paint of yourself now and in your stubbornness and selfishness, your “self”-defense turns to lying, trusting no one, loving no one, caring nothing for all you have worked so hard to become and ready to throw it all away just to prove you are right even though you know you are wrong. No, “self” never paints a pretty picture.

Now is the most crucial time in your Life for you to shut-up and “Listen”! Now is the moment when the higher mind which has never been fulfilled in you will begin to speak through all the turmoil and chaos and demand fulfillment. Now is the moment for you to give up your right to be right or your “self” pretenses of being so. Now is the time for you to go and look in the mirror and “see” that you are on the wrong side of the glass. Now is

the moment for you to make a decision which you are perfectly capable of making and, once made, to honestly and sincerely Act upon it - not in a while or tomorrow, but Right NOW before it is too late and the opportunity passes you by.

Yet, as important as your making the Right decision is and your Acting promptly upon it, it is not the whole cure, for now more than ever, you need to Share your turmoil and chaos with others, a brother or sister or brothers and sisters within The Order of Thirteen - this is what Sharing and Caring is for - healing! If you keep all that garbage within you that is exactly what you become, garbage, waste, then.

You need to remember that no man or woman is an island and some of you go beyond this in your silly carnal pride - you think you are a continent!

So, happy is the person who can swallow his pride and turn to a friend who is also struggling to be an Equal among Equals who will Listen and, yes, honestly sympathize with them because they too have been there and know from hard experience what is needed - one who will encourage and help them to “see” what is happening. And very happy is the person caught up in this situation who can finally and honestly cry out with Paul - “For the

sake of Christ, then, I am content with weaknesses, insults, hardships, persecutions, and calamities; for when I am weak then I am strong.” Then, having said so get back on track, on the Way to “The Way” and prove that strength! Display it in your every Word, Act, and Deed, come what may. And this my dear Brothers, Sisters, and Partners is the proof of whether you control your own mind or not!

Now as promised we will outline some of the changes necessary within The Order of Thirteen. What we are about to disclose is not for the purpose of driving anyone out of The Order but to get those involved to make the necessary changes needed as quickly as possible. If any of the following shoes fit you then get yourself a change at once and if they do not fit you keep on in the ones you are wearing now as they will get increasingly more comfortable as you journey along the Path.

It is no secret that some of you are quite irresponsible, disordered, undisciplined and still practice the use of half-truths and untruths as a normal and acceptable way of Life and none of these spell Freedom, per the Message, nor progress for the individuals involved nor The Order. Obviously, these five barriers or their perpetrators must go.

Some of you still have no real conception of what the Message says, what it contradicts and why it does so, and

no true concept of what the Message teaches and doesn't teach, and why.

Yet, in spite of this, some of you still carry around the burden of a "know-it-all" attitude and facade - so deep in "self" that you know very little about Spiritualism and how to be a True Christian Spiritualist - this needs be changed.

Some of you are still taking things out of context from the Message and attributing literal meanings to them which are incorrect. Furthermore, some of you are still habitually Rationalizing and Intellectualizing what the Message and The Order of Thirteen Presentations, Letters, Lessons, Communications, etc., clearly state in order to make them justify your interpretation of them and, worse, to justify your ways which are clearly not the Way to "The Way." You need to get out of "self," your "I," "me," "mine," "my" mentality and get into the "we," "us," "our" mentality. Some of you display no real sincere drive nor desire to become One Minded and Equal among Equals, instead you display a want to be first, to be Above others and not simply an Equal.

Keep in mind that it is The Order of Thirteen that is destined to be great, renowned then. While personalities come and go there can only be one Order of Thirteen.

As we view the problems within The Order at the

moment, we must, out of fairness, properly see it as a personality problem – an individual problem then. Not all are exerting the effort needed to fulfill the directives of the Presentations nor the effort called for to fulfill their personal obligations as outlined in the Message of I Paul. So, let's get honest with each other. If you insist on being irresponsible, disordered, undisciplined, and insincere we shall wish you well and you take this way of life somewhere else for it cannot and will not be tolerated any longer in The Order of Thirteen.

Personally, I feel we have the nucleus now for a great Order of Thirteen but without the full and honest and sincere cooperation of each one of you we will be forced to make changes for the Well-Being of The Order itself.

Yet, in spite of all I have just said, We would like to see The Order begin to Come of Age and establish its Unity by taking an Active Role in shaping its Autonomy by disciplining itself. We are prepared to relax our edict preventing The Order from making Rules and we want therefore to hear from each of you, in writing, by mail, your feelings pro or con on this matter within fifteen days of the release of this Lesson Thirteen. So until we hear from all of you under the terms given above we will not belabor these problems within The Order any further.

Going on let me say this. The Presentations when followed are your way out of the woods – no longer lost, no longer deep in “self,” no longer clinging to the past, no longer beholden to a distorted mind, no longer spiritually ignorant, no longer babes on a milk diet. Once you make the Code of Self-Forgetfulness your order and Code of Life and actually begin to follow the Directives given in The Order of Thirteen Communications and persistently continue Doing this the Results begin to manifest themselves. And these Results lead to Freedom, for real Freedom is the Ability to Always Act Natural through the Full Measure of Faith and the Knowledge Received that prove this to be the Natural Thing for you to do.

You see, according to the Will of God, Created Life here is supposed to be a feast in the garden of Abundance, yet the majority of human beings are starving to death simply because they do not know how, or will not for various reasons, “Act Natural.”

When you are pretending to be Natural, play acting then, you are living out an uncreative and illusionary existence and not living up to your Inherent Potential and therefore never really being You, the Whole You, then, ending up starving yourself to death in the midst of Abundance. The Only way that you can really be You, the

Whole You in the Now is to Do those things taught to you in the Message and in The Order of Thirteen that allow you to Act Natural and truly enjoy the Abundances of this Life and be Prepared to Follow Up this Life's experiences in an even greater Life experience that is Coming.

If you haven't completely understood what Acting Natural means from both the Message and The Order of Thirteen material released up to now, this Ability to Act Natural naturally is not only Freedom at its highest possible manifestation here, but it is also the highest peak of True Love attainable in the Now. For here is where that which is Earned is joined with that which is Gifted in all of its glory, joy, abundance and wonderment of Unity, Peace and Well-Being.

The Message of I Paul itself tells us in many ways how to Unite the Opposites and open the Way for us to Act Natural. So here I would like to give you an example of why we all have such a difficult time in our effort to always Act Natural. And we will begin our example with a simple but profound statement - "When I Act Natural, I am displaying a Truth that my Physical Life and my Spiritual Life are Kindred Lives with neither ever forgetting again the Need each have for the Other. Now I am Somebody going Somewhere and no longer a Nobody going Nowhere." Yet,

in spite of this, we still struggle in our attempts to Always Act Natural and the reasons for this are also simple and deep – Here, in this Life, I am conscious of the fact that I am a spirit inhabiting a physical body. And it is this carnal nature of my Wholeness which I know better than I know my True-Self or the Spirit nature of my Wholeness. So, it is more convenient and much easier for the “physical me” to be the carnal self, acting alone, than it is for this “self” to equally recognize my True-Self and allow it to act in me and with me, thereby allowing the “Whole me” to do what I should Always be doing anyway – Acting Natural or, if you like, being Fully Human and Fully Spiritual in the Now.

The solution then lies in our Recognition of and conformity to our Wholeness and the beauty of it lies in the truth of its being nothing more than a simple matter of the minds, with my mind embracing the Ordinances of Formative Causation and Reciprocity (as well as others of course) and make Acting Natural second nature to me through practicing the Code of “Self” – Forgetfulness and concentrating on controlling my “mind” at all times, being Free under the terms of being Righteous in my every thought, word, act and deed and therein obeying the Mind of Christ which is Fully Activated in me, my Wholeness, then, Now!

Allow me now to say it in another way for you. If I set my mind in a Determined Awareness Effort of personal Order and Self-discipline to mind both the things of the spirit and the flesh, the Righteous Things in Life then, in my every thought, word, act and deed, I can Act Natural without sacrificing anything of real and true value in my Life - in the “Wholeness” of my Life, then, here and Now.

And the wonderment of all this comes when I do set the mind and follow that setting faithfully for it is then that I realize that I am out of “self” and my Actions are in accord with the “Code of Self-Forgetfulness” and I am caught up in a State of Acting Natural and Receiving the results of such for I now come quite suddenly to the Recognition that I have Fully Activated the Mind of Christ within me as those results which I have been unconcerned with up to now begin to manifest themselves in my Life as my very Well-Being.

Now I ask you one and all, can you make it any simpler than that?

As far as I am concerned there is only one other way of saying all of this in a less cumbersome manner and that is to say simply “Love and do as you will.” Now that’s Truly Simple to say and to write but I still haven’t met anyone here who understands the complexities of it well enough to

put it into perpetual action. But then I haven't met anyone here who can Act Natural in the manner I have explained it either.

What most neophytes and those of you who are caught up in useless clouds of vanity fail to understand is the truth that none of these Ways given will ever work until you Do. In fact nothing good, right, and true in your Life will work well unless you get severely honest with yourself and others; become supremely Responsible in all areas of your Life; become strictly Ordered and well disciplined; and overcome your fears and anxieties by dropping your foolish likes and dislikes and stopping your backbiting and your proneness to gossip and begin to display some Respect for others in place of constantly putting others down and until you do these things don't expect any Respect for yourself for, like Freedom, Respect is something you must earn. And the same goes for Trust and for Understanding and Compassion. Cease being so selfish and curb your attempts to be first and above others in Life especially so when you know inside you are not superior nor deserve to be so. Strive first to be an equal among Equals, and for some of you that will be a big step up for you and one you have yet to display you are equal to. Yet, contrariwise, you are capable and inherently so to be an equal. Let us explain this inherent potential to you.

What the Human Race here on W-303 fails to comprehend is the Truth that we all stand in a “State of Grace” and have been so standing ever since the “Happening” of the events of the Cross. This, then, is the state of Divine Consciousness of which I have been aware of since I received Communication Three of the Message of I Paul and have dutifully kept to myself per my instructions from I Paul until I, personally, Fully Understood it and could Follow and Practice Acting Natural. And I am elated, ecstatic really, that Jesse has given me the privilege of Sharing this great Mystery of God with all of you, my Partners, and soon to be my fellow Practicing Spirit Guides. As I Paul said, “In time all of your questions will be answered.” And if you recall we reiterated that promise in I, Paul Thirty-three. I Paul also made it clear that it was noble and wise to ask questions that were directed to ward Good and Wisdom (and where does the path in the woods lead?).

So, going on, let me explain further this “State of Grace.” The Supreme Spirit gave us Its Genius to Act Natural and to Do the Righteous Things in this Life by accentuating the good, the right, and the true things of Life in order for us to share in its Abundance and ensure the Well-Being of All in ALL (the Doing of this represents one-half of the Dimension of Existence that we all need to reach

within the Laws that Remain Constant – the Physical and the Psychical Laws, then, within the System that Always Prevails). When we do not embrace and utilize this inherited genius within us LIFE is not responsible for our “mistakes” – we are – for that is the Justice of, and not the wrath of LIFE. And none of us can plead ignorance as an excuse for we are well aware that all evil, all the bad and the wrong and the untrue things that occur in this world all wear a Human Face and not a spiritual one. Human minds and human hands are what harm, kill, maim, injure, hate, degrade, enslave and so forth, not atoms or evil spirits or weapons and so forth.

We also know from the Master that only God is Good and also from the stinging reminder of Paul that none of us are good, but these Truths do not prevent us, nor were intended to prevent us, from reaching higher states of Consciousness and being One-Minded in Doing the Righteous Things in this Life through Acting Natural wherein we realize our inherent capability to Do the good, the right, and the true things in this Life that promotes not only our own Well-Being but the Well-Being of All Life in the here and now of great Abundance and open-ended opportunities.

So, our individual Action here is not based on, and

cannot be based on, Being Good, for that is God's Domain, but based rather on Doing good which is clearly our domain. And the Abundance of this Life is clearly here where we are and it is ours Collectively to Care for and Share with each other. And our Right to Care for and Share in it comes not from our Being Good but obviously only by our Doing of the Good, the Right, and the True.

From all of this you should know also that at the higher levels of Awareness it is Love and Truth that constitute "the System that Always Prevails" and that Acting Natural as a piece or part of an unobstructed dimension of existence is then the Way to our Ultimate Perfection wherein we retain our identity, through mind and spirit, from start to finish or from Here and Now to the Then and There of the Kingdom of God as Perfected Soul by the Happening of the ALL in ALL.

Now I write with my own hand: What you in The Order of Thirteen Need to get set in your minds is the fact that what we are Doing with the Message of I Paul is exactly what Jesus Did with the Law. We are expanding on it in practically every segment of it, so it is clear, or should be, that, you, in The Order of Thirteen follow the directives of The Order "First"! and "Foremost"! and then what is not in the Presentations to The Order, or, in its

Communications, then you turn to the Message, when and if, in doubt as to what you should do in a particular situation. And, yes, just in case you are wondering, my dear brothers, sisters, cousins, partners, All of you still have the obligation to peruse the Full Message of I Paul released up to and continuing in the Now.

Now, since this is the Last Message Lesson to The Order of Thirteen, I, Paul, would like to take the remaining space to say a few things on and of my own.

With my Inner Eye I see you and I “know” you. With my Inner Ear, I do not hear you. Why? Because I can hear and see with my Inner Eye. So, you may ask, what good is my Inner Ear, or, perhaps you may ask what do I hear with it? The answer is simple - I “hear” Wisdom and Nothing but Wisdom, for that is my Balance, and I might add, it is also my Power and my Weakness.

So here we all are. We have evolved from a simple prayer group in the beginning into an “Order of Thirteen” within the Family in order to make known once again those Truths of Life after death and to be the Light of the LIGHT and assist in returning our Earth to the fold of the Pure and the True Spiritualism of the LIFE and its LIGHT (now let’s get spiritually serious).

Whenever we think and act from a state of Divine

Consciousness, the “State of Grace,” then, wherein we Receive from, Listen to, and Act with Spirit we not only Act Natural but are, and from that Acting we personally Receive Protection from and with Spirit! – As a Practicing Spirit Guide Mystic Ambassador Servant Slave of Christ. And to BE a Slave of Christ is not to be enslaved by Christ but to become, through your own self-discipline and, volition, a totally devoted and dedicated Servant Slave of Christ, the LIGHT, then. You need then, a profound sense of ONENESS, sameness, of harmony, and of being an equal among Equals and an heir with Jesus, then, not inferior to nor superior to anyone or anything in or out of The Order of Thirteen, and, your designation should be a constant reminder of that. Now it should be no secret to you of The 13 that the Message of I Paul has been pushing you to Prepare you to Control your own mind to a place where “One-Mindedness” and “One-Pointedness” comes natural to you. Simply reflect back to what the Message has been teaching and exhorting all these years and see if it fits snugly into this “One-Pointedness” of the Call to Prepare, Follow, Come. And if you know your Message you will readily “see” that this is so. And now The Order of Thirteen and its Message is exhorting you to become Fully Committed – to invoke, then, from you an Agreement to become One in All Areas of “One-Mindedness” and “One-

Pointedness” for the sake of True Christian Spiritualism.

When you feel you are worthy, please take your seat in  
The Order of Thirteen.

From the Collective Unconscious

I bid you Peace.

I, Paul.<sub>z</sub> ↑3.

## **Lesson #14: Lucid Dreams V**

A Lesson to the Order of “13” of “The Family.” Lucid Dreams #5

Greetings and Salutations to you All. Not to keep to yourselves, but explicitly given for you to give.

So here we are back to Lucid Dreams. Just how do we face up to a dream in order to turn a dream state into a Lucid Dream state wherein we become conscious yet remaining in the sleep state?

Just how do we face up to a Lucid Dream? Do we ignore it and simply go on dreaming? Do we just roll over and go back into a deep sleep? Or to dream on and on in our sleep in a REM state. Or do we make a move to become involved, really and truly and factually involved? Let us all explore this phenomenon.

### **- Blocks and Barriers -**

There is always Light, shining in the darkness, for those who dare open their eyes in the night and answer the summons of the Spirit – the summons to Come and Share and Care with “me” for the Well-Being of All. How do we answer this summons? By uniting the minds for Freedom, Justice and Equality for All – with absolutely no exceptions.

Now, what does all that have to do with a Lucid Dream experience? I'll let all of you answer that query. And no, I, Paul, am not ducking the answer, I know it well. The uniting of the Minds, the very Renewing then of your own mind, is Freedom, Justice and Equality, no matter how you judge it. You see, Freedom, Justice, Equality is what a Family is – it is what Friendship and Fellowship, Brotherhood and Sisterhood are, and all about. And, as the Message of I Paul makes totally clear, is the oft chilling Truth, to some, that Charity begins at Home – without that Love, that Truth, that Unity, that Peace, you will always remain put, “at home” to your “self” and useless to any one, especially so to yourself! You will suffer, but so will everyone else who knows you, has contact with you, and have to share unwillingly so, your misery and your failure to be fully human and fully spiritual.

You see, my dear Sisters and Brothers, yea see, the Lucid Dream State is the answer to all your dreams, and “we” are in the business of making your Dreams come true, to full fruition, then. No easy task this. And this is why I have turned toward “blocks and barriers” to help you all to help yourselves, through recognition and, hopefully, to a clear and concise understanding of these hindrances that bar you from the magnificent experience of Transcendence. Like the Soul, Transcendence is a very

simple matter of the minds!

The reason we dream has never really been understood by anyone. And this lack of pure understanding is how and why we are plagued by theories and the reason why we create new words to add to our vocabularies. These newly coined words and terms are used to explain the theory which is, in itself, unexplainable.

Now these “explanations” lead us to the next question – Why do so many people resist the reality of the Lucid Dream and refuse to accept the fact that such a thing even exists? And the answer leads us to the primary cause of all blockages (the stuck-in state) and the cause of all barriers (the stubbornness state). And where, pray tell, do they have their roots? Well, I, Paul, will tell you.

Those who are familiar with the psychological growth process know that most people, the world over, will somehow resist a change in Life, if they are not “Prepared” for such a change, or are “Fully Prepared” to change, and do so.

Now there are a number of primary conditions necessary for a person’s psychological readiness for change:

A. The change must appear rational – people always

present to themselves as rational even their most irrational and their most erratic changes –

- B. The change must appear as an improvement over one's old situation (which they are putting behind them “get thee behind me satan, yes it's you I'm speaking to”).
- C. The change must be comfortably paced. It must not be so rapid and so huge as to obliterate the familiar psychological landmarks which make a person feel at home.
- D. The change must clearly and visibly strengthen the person's sense of spiritual security.

These four, then, lay the foundation of all “psychological change.” And be aware of the Truth that “change” is a key to traveling to those places where others fear to tread. Dare to Transcend and you will!

You see dear Partners, brothers and sisters, that your “Singular obsession” must be Survival! And survival demands one thing – “Adaptation,” and what does that mean if not “Change” and “Changing” until you are “Changed.” And, pray tell, what does “psychological change” mean? Well, if I read and understand the Message of I Paul it can only mean one thing – the renewing of your

mind. And the renewing of your mind can best be discerned by one who embraces the Seven Laws and the Seven Pillars of the Supreme Spirit and, wow, are we most certainly talking divinity here? You can bet your life on it!

Transcendence from one plane to another is not like hopping on a bus or a train or a plane to go from one place here on Earth to another place here on Earth – these trips are simple for us and natural to us today.

And, let me say right here, that the ability to transcend should also be viewed as natural to us because it actually is so. After all, we are physically natural as we are psychically natural – and it is high time the human race here on W-303 began to Act Natural! It's the answer to all that ails us, to all that fails us, and the cure to all the chaos we manufacture here. My God, there is no need for all these ailments, for all these failures, or for all the chaos that plagues us around this spaceship of ours, day in and day out. And it's all because of “wants” and has no connection with “Need.” And I tell you Now, that “wants” are one of the biggest blocks and barriers to OBE's, Lucid Dream fulfillments, and a Transcendental Experience!

Now I ask you all – what did I just say above?

Now my dear sisters and brothers what is the point of that “above,” above? What am I attempting to get across to

you? Well, pay very strict attention to the following:

And I say unto you, pick up your cross and Come Follow me, if you hear me and see what I do and emulate me, you will have no further use for your cross and I will take it up for you, for my yoke will be easy on you and my burden will be Light upon you but if you stagger and fall and leave me, you will carry your cross for ever and ever and you will come to understand that my ways and my Acts were the Way to the LIGHT and everlasting LIFE, but you became fatigued, staggered and fell and forsaken me and spent all your energy and wasted all your acts on what your cross actually represents, worldly wants and desires well you have them, but you do not have me nor The Way, Yea you are lost, verily had you been innocent and unaware of what you were doing, I would have left my flock and like any good shepherd I would have Come Out and searched for you until I found you and taken you home.

Now, for your edification, the above is an excerpt of the last Lucid Dream I've ever had and I stopped Dreaming dreams shortly thereafter. I don't need dreams or visions or visions and dreams, the reason is quite clear and simple – I Receive! It's direct and requires no other medium, i.e., meditation, trance, dream, etc.

For those of you who have not as yet been able to bring

forth your innate psychic abilities and have trouble in maintaining a disciplined meditation cycle and experience, the so-called Lucid Dream affords the best way for you to achieve OBE's and a True Transcendence. I say "so-called Lucid Dream" because I have to realize that its True Term is exactly what such an experience and what all related phenomena truly are, i.e., "Conscious Awareness"! And, this, regardless of what state the physical body is in, awake, asleep, alive or dead! And you must keep in mind that in the awake state, for example, we are consciously aware which is not what "we" are saying to you and not what we mean at all.

Furthermore, it is not an altered state of consciousness either, nor a subliminal state of consciousness and it has nothing to do with any such thing as the unconscious, coma, blackouts or any other thing you can conjure up and it is not what has been termed and coined as cosmic consciousness.

Yet Conscious Awareness has a very important partner which you should all cite as "Inner Reality"!

Now, what is this Inner Reality? I'll tell you - it is Truth, the truth of creation, of the processes of Involution and Evolution, the truth that there is nothing that actually exists and is real that does not exist in all of us in some

form, shape or structure. Inner Reality also includes, regardless of its present form, shape and Structure within us all, everything that ever was created anywhere in the Universe and actually Is or has ever been, Yesterday, Today and Tomorrow! “See, Now?” Well wait, there’s more:

Conscious Awareness, then, is the Highest Level Of Consciousness that Exists and the Highest level of Awareness that Exists and United they are the Highest and most Absolute Power that exists simply because together they incorporate all consciousness and all awareness that exists here, there, everywhere, due to the Inner Reality that is in all of mankind everywhere.

Perhaps now you can see the very necessity of being Fully Human (The Inner Reality state), because you Carry All Things with you, Forward and Upwards, and you never have to look backwards because there is nothing to see. On the other hand, you need to act Fully Spiritual also (the Conscious Awareness State), and with the Minds United (the ideal state), “be ye One Mind,” you then come to it (the Ideal State), by Acting Natural!

Now getting back to blocks and barriers. Let me further explain why no one should attempt any means or ways open to them to achieve an OBE or a Transcendence while fatigued, in a state of anger, or in an impure state:

1. In order to maintain, on a regular basis, any medium state conducive to “Lucid Dreaming,” meditation, etc., which lead to OBE’s and eventually a Transcendence, of the safe return type, one must, with no exceptions, maintain a high level of Energy. And this means both Physical and Spiritual, and I, Paul, doesn’t mean here the go-go, gung-ho type of energy, I’m talking about the Energy of Conscious Awareness.

2. Yet on the physical side, if you’re tired, fatigued, worn out, etc., you might just not even bother to try. You aren’t Prepared for what may lay ahead, and chances are that you may hurt and frustrate yourself more than you immediately may recognize. One should never play games with their own Inner Reality. And keep in mind that none of you were promised an easy road. You want one? You’d better construct it yourself, because you know that The Spirit is not going to do for you that which you are capable of doing for yourself.

3. So, we now know that regular practice requires a high level of energy, a level you need to maintain, come hell or high water, and only you can do it, and it’s not difficult to do since it’s really a simple matter of the minds. But, it’s not simple if you do not own your own mind and I can hear you right now, thinking “Well, I don’t know about

the rest of this Order, but I sure as hell own my mind,” or something to that effect. Well, Really! You read the following, then tell us if you really do own your own mind: You see, nothing wears you out more than worry, stress, anxiety, “self” likes and dislikes, selfishness, wants, fears, and silly baseless emotionalisms along with anger and revenge, procrastinations and excuses, gossip and backbiting, jealousy, greed and so on, ad infinitum.

They, the above, all are inane acts and thoughts, empty and lacking sense and they are the tools of a Fool! There is a rule here, i.e., Owe no one “Anything” except your Love, your compassion and yourself and all else you do have to give!

Share your Inner Reality and care with your Conscious Awareness – Be present and not simply available when you are needed, and a True Christian Spiritualist is always needed, and especially a Spirit Guide “TCS”! A member of the Order of Thirteen then.

Now elsewhere in this Teaching I gave you an excerpt from my last so-called Lucid Dream which, in Truth, is Conscious Awareness which Never deserts you, but you often leave it to pursue more worldly matters and you abandon Spiritual Values and Principles to do so. Every time you become caught up in and overwhelmingly

engrossed with things and matters belonging to the external world, things that really do not matter, then the quality and quantity of your Conscious Awareness diminishes and will vanish from your thoughts and considerations.

Well, I started out to tell you about my latest Dream, if I can call the experience a Dream since I, with help, induced it. The date was October 27th, 1990, a Saturday, and the time was somewhere between 11:00pm and 1:57am.

I have been seriously studying the Message, the Book of the Two Ways and the Scripture as they relate to Consciousness, to Awareness, to Inner, and to Reality and I found more than a few surprises.

The excerpt that I gave herein began as a simple, routine “Lucid Dream” which rapidly turned into an OBE and as quickly into a Transcendence of a very personal nature.

Jesse, as usual, was my guide. We traveled through the first four pillars and settled down at the 5th, the mansion or “House” of Wisdom. It was the same as I had last seen it, only the participants were changed. But I didn’t mean to tell you this, my intention is to explain to you how I came to Dream again.

As I was studying the four subjects mentioned above, I had in my mind what to say in my next Lucid Dream paper to you, the Order, that would further broaden your Knowledge and horizons in your practicing of the Lucid Dream phenomena. This paper on the subject, numbered Lucid Dreams #5 is the result of those thoughts in my mind but knowing that “Lucid Dream” was, in fact, a misnomer, I said to myself that it was too bad that I no longer Dreamt Dreams, then I was asked “Why don’t you Dream Dreams anymore?” I replied that the reason for it was the fact that I no longer had anything to dream about. Back came a reply, “You do Now”!

So, I deliberately set myself up an experiment and psyched myself up to do just that, have a so-called “Lucid Dream.” Since it was going to be “my Dream” I needed a scenario, a plan, so I concocted one and set about to pull it off. Have you ever heard of anything like this – I am going to Dream a Dream that I have written ahead of time and have plotted, step by step, to take complete charge of it when, and if, I pulled it off. And I had no doubts about whether I could or not – I was all go and all confident about being successful (I shudder to think what the Psychiatric Institute would think about this and what the staff at Duke University that is studying, searching and evaluating the phenomena of ESP and other related psychical matters, a

very extensive study and one, up to now, contains many surprises).

My first task, after establishing my confidence, was to write out a short script, memorize it and go to bed the next evening. (the date I mentioned above, which, incidentally involves two possible dates, the “Saturday” and the “Sunday” following it – the time schedule is the clue to that truth). This I did.

Now, I suppose, you want to know what the script was and how it worked out?

Well, it was a simple script and it worked out fairly well, fairly close to my plans, but with a few surprises. Does that answer all your questions? No?

Well, my dear Brothers and Sisters I intend to give you all of the facts from beginning to end, the plan, the script, the Dream, the OBE, the Transcendence (but not in detail, for the Transcendence was, as I, Paul, has already related to you, a very personal happening, that had nothing to do with you, the Order or The Family, our Central Branch and all the other, now separate and autonomous branches). I, Paul, am still the sole recipient of the Message, now complete, and all matters pertaining to, and germane to it. And I might point out to you all that you are the only Order of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in All and always

will be as long as we hold the Directorship and the Two Earth W-303, Founders of “The Family,” whether they are here or there, it matters not.

O.K., with that out of the way, let us get back to the primary themes of this paper on Conscious Awareness and Inner Reality.

**- The Script -**

October 25, 1990

As I said, I kept it simple. I devised a plan wherein I had an appointment with a doctor the following morning. I made arrangements with my Brother and Partner and Co-Founder “T” to take me to the doctor. He was to pick me up at 8:00am for an 8:45am appointment. My plan was to set my alarm clock for 6:00am in order for me to prepare myself for the doctor’s visit.

Furthermore, as a safety valve, “T” was going to call me to be sure I was up and to tell me he was on the way over. Now that was the Script. What I was shooting for was to have it played out in a “Lucid Dream State” with no exceptions. And that’s what I was banking to do - Create and Control a Dream, my very own dream, something, insofar as I know, has never been done before. Those three little words “Now you do” drove me to attempt this experiment. Those three little words constitute what I meant when I said, I induced this Dream with some

assistance. Are you following me? I hope so.

**- The Dream Itself -**

My fictional arrangement with “T” was to have him call me at 6:00am to be sure that I was up or at least awake and to tell me he was on his way. I also told him I would set my alarm clock just to be sure that I was awake, or up, because I would have to get out of bed to shut it off and I had it timed so that the phone should ring at almost the same time.

Well, I finally got into bed and I had no other thoughts on my mind except my script and I was eager to get asleep and see if my little plan was going to pan out. Now, I won't bore you with all of the details, except to say that I did fall asleep and I began to dream and then, suddenly, I became cognizant of the fact that although my body was deep in slumber my mind was not, it was totally conscious and aware that I was in a dream state, and I knew I was in someone else's Dream but I did not know whose it was and I couldn't spot a friendly face – here I was in a dream state where I didn't recognize a single solitary person that I knew. I asked myself why am I here? What shall I do? To say the least, I was confused and at a total loss as to what I was to do and my mind had one overwhelming thought, Escape! Ironically, I can't, even to this day, ever recalling

to my memory, anything about my original purpose for wanting to be in a “Lucid Dream,” I was in one alright, a real doozer of a Dream that had me totally baffled, and remember that I was no novice at this, and all I could think of was “I’ve got to get the hell out of here.”

What’s interesting about this Dream is the fact that it was the only dream in my Life in which I did not personally know anybody, and in which I did not recognize the location of where it was happening. And it was also the very first time I could not end the dream on my own volition.

Now, although these “happenings” were new to me, surprising to me, and certainly frustrating to me, they were rather mild when compared to what happened next.

As I said, my primary thought was that of “I’ve got to get the hell out of here,” and I knew it was all connected to the Way Out which, in turn, was somehow connected to the Way In. So, paying little attention to the Dream itself, I exerted my resources toward locating a way out of this fiasco – and all the while trying to figure out how I got into it. We can say that confusion reigned everywhere.

It occurred to me, as I roamed about looking for a way out, that indeed I was in a hall, a great hall, an immense hall, a hall I believe no one I know here has ever seen the

likes of, one so huge that standing in one place you could not see its ends and could only perceive its sides and the ceiling was faintly discernable only due to the lights emanating from it at intervals. All in all, it was truly awesome!

I tell you all this for it seemed like I had walked mile upon mile along one side of the hall looking for a door or a window, neither showed up until I had completely encircled some truly enormous column and decided it was one of a pair used as silent sentinels to guard this mountainous but very plain door.

I looked to my left and I looked to the door, then I gazed at the Pillars up and down, and then quite brazenly I walked towards the door looking for a handle but as it turned out, they turned outward in silence and I stepped through them into, onto, etc., Nothing!

I couldn't believe what was happening. No matter where we looked there was nothing. I broke a rule by looking back for the door, the pillars and the gigantic walls but they were not there whether you looked East, North, South, West, above, below, left, or right, all there was was nothing! But what is Nothing? Where does it come from? How does it work? I noticed it didn't move, I could perceive no resistance, no temperature, no density, no color, hell,

no-nothing! Yet I was standing on it or suspended upright in “it.” I could breathe and I could talk and I could scream, and I could feel. Scream and feel, I hadn’t given them much thought, so I mustered up the highest and loudest scream you’ve damn well ever heard “Jeeeessee”! As it rumbled away and diminished not a peep came back, everything surrounding us remained exactly the same – nothing!

And it was then that I noticed for the first time that I was stark naked. I know that my cigarettes and lighter were gone, for nowhere in the nowhere could they be seen.

So, there I was, nowhere, doing nothing, seeing nothing, knowing hardly a thing, breaking all the rules (looking back to-wards a door that wasn’t there, in nowhere, wherever the hell that I was in the Universe.)

Now right here, before going any further, let me wake you all up and remind you that I’m the one asleep, the one who is Dreaming in a state of Conscious Awareness, is me, I, Paul. Not you – so keep the Watch!

Well, here I was in what I am sure most would call it, nowhere, even if they could be there and see nothing, hear nothing, feel nothing (touch, that is) taste nothing, but could feel emotionally and my thinking I finally got under full control.

The frustration was gone – it should not have been there in the first place. Now thinking, I said to myself, since I am here, I must be “Someplace”! The second question then, was could Nowhere be “Somewhere” or “Someplace”? Like I say to myself, “if there really is (a) “Nowhere” how do we prove it – after all one of the commands of “The Message” is to Prove all things!” Perhaps Nowhere is that nowhere with no beginning and no end. You know, I said that in jest, but now, after contemplating on it, I take it and treat it with much more seriousness and respect.

So anyway, here we are hanging around, floating or simply suspended somewhere, nowhere, someplace or no place apparently with nothing to do but wait apprehensively or “Think”! I Chose to Think.

I thought firstly about everything having an opposite with ONE exception.

Now I’m saying to myself, “Jesus, what I wouldn’t give right now for one of good old Noah’s dictionaries, a bible concordance and a copy of Communication #33 of the I, Paul series.”

Well, my sisters and brothers, as much as I would like to announce such a phenomenon to you, I can’t. And believe me, I’m “sorry” I can’t.

Anywise, it wouldn't have been much help considering what happened next. It went totally, absolutely even, pitch black, and “nowhere was nowhere to be seen.”

“Ah ha,” I said to myself, “If it all of a sudden became light, would I then be able to see or “see,” then, this “nowhere”?” “Something to keep in mind,” said I.

The Light leaving the scene didn't surprise me as much as did the sensation of my moving or being moved by something or someone. Having nothing else to do, I settled down, relaxed and awaited the next “happening”!

Not surprising to me, it didn't take long to find myself on our side of the “Gate of Transcendence” looking at a smugly smiling Jesse beckoning me to Come on through, which I did, and together we traveled through that Transcendence which I informed you earlier on was a highly personal trip to me and one you won't get a chance to peruse until I am no longer here with you in the flesh. Your Historian-Archivist will have them in his capable and secure hands for whatever distribution or reading the Order of Thirteen shall so decide.

As to the end of the OBE that we have been discussing herein, let me give you its conclusion “as it stands at the moment” for I, Paul, at least, am not done with it. It has too many inconclusions for my taste.

I went through the Gate of Transcendence again, after short farewells I left Jesse and headed for the human plane of all OBE's. As I entered it, I saw my body in its sleep trance and gazed upon its obvious peace and contentment and was, in a way, reluctant to re-enter and leave that chaotic Dream behind me unresolved. I just don't like mysteries to be left as mysteries.

But things being as they were, we went ahead and re-entered with no problems whatsoever.

I laid there enjoying the peace and contentment when suddenly a bell rang and I did something I had never done before. I jumped up and immediately went to my bureau to turn off my alarm clock, when at the next ring I realized it was the phone and so I crossed the room and picked up the phone and said "Hello." The voice on the other end of the line said "Good Morning, are you up?" (it was Brother "T"). Sure, I said, I just got up. He said, "Well, I'm just following orders, making sure you would be ready for the doctor's visit." I replied, "Sure, I'll be ready when you get here, thanks for the call though, Now I'll go and shave and get ready, thanks again and I love you." He said the same and we hung up.

Now there was nothing unusual about all of that until the next thing happened.

The phone rang again and it woke me up and I got up on the second ring and picked it up on the third ring. I said “Hello” and the voice on the line asked for so and so, no one I knew and it proved out she had dialed the wrong number. I hung up the phone and then it hit me like a ton of bricks. I looked over to the bureau and, of course, there wasn’t any alarm clock there, because I didn’t even have one. Then I checked the date in my diary for the doctor’s visit and there was none listed. I now realized that no alarm clock rang and no telephone call from Brother and Partner “T” ever took place. The facts prove conclusively that the alarm clock and the “T” telephone call are impossibilities – they just couldn’t have happened and now after much inner searching, I must agree to it – but believe me they were real to me.

Yet, there’s a good side to all of this. I KNOW beyond the shadow of a doubt, that the Lucid Dream (C.A.<sup>3</sup>), the OBE and the Safe Transcendence all did take place and are quite accurately reported herein.

Yet we have an enigma or two to solve here:

1. Why didn’t my plan, my script, emerge during my Lucid State?

---

<sup>3</sup> Conscious Awareness

2. Is there truly a “Nowhere,” and I suppose I should also include here:
3. Why, after my re-entry, did I remain in an OBE state and hear my non-existent alarm clock ring and my attempt to shut it off, only to realize it was the phone, which I answered and swear that I talked to “T”?

Once I got organized again, I checked out what dear old Noah had to say about “Nowhere.” Here is what I found (the underscoring is mine):

1. Not in, at, or to anyplace.
2. A place non-existent or remote.
3. A state or place of non-existence.
4. A place or a state of obscurity.

It would seem to me that good old Noah raises more than a few points about this so-called “nowhere,” a word I believe to be much maligned and misunderstood for quite some time now.

There’s nothing in the bible concordance about it. (According to Brother “T” who checked it out for me).

You see, I ask myself, where did this “nowhere” come

from? Was it created or has it always existed, and if so, why?

So, I've started to peruse the bible for any possible clues that might assist me in my search for where I was in that section of my OBE which seemed like nowhere to me at the time. So far, Genesis 1:1 through 30 have been my best argument that there simply is no "nowhere," anywhere! Furthermore, I believe that Genesis 31 coupled with Genesis 30 of Genesis chapter one gives the best biblical argument for my way of thinking which is the best I am cognizant of up to now.

Even Genesis chapter 2 is quite helpful.

Brother "T" stopped by with a new Noah Webster Dictionary and this is what it has to say about "nowhere":

Nowhere, Adv. 1 – in, at, or to no place; not anywhere; "the missing pen was nowhere to be found." "We went nowhere last weekend." 2 – the state of non-existence or seeming non-existence. "A gang of thieves appeared from nowhere." 3 – Anonymity or obscurity – "She came from nowhere to win the championship":

[ME; OE<sup>4</sup> – nōhware, nōhwaer, see no. 1. where] which

---

<sup>4</sup> Middle English; Old English

says:

- 1) in or at what place?
- 2) where do you live?
- 3) where is he?

I don't know if any of this helps, but I'm trying to get as many opinions and explanations as I can. I do this to help you as I now turn this teaching, Lucid Dreams. #5, over to the "Order" for a collective discernment of the Order from A to Z of the subjects herein, including any and all teachings included in this paper.

But before I do conclude, let me say that the word "Nowhere" appears nowhere in the bible. In 1 Samuel, 10:14 it's two words not the single word.

Now in the Message of I Paul it's quite a different story because it is profusely used. I am attaching here to this Lucid Dreams. #5, as an integral part of Lucid Dreams. #5 for enlightenment.<sup>5</sup>

Perhaps Genesis 1:1 ought to read that "In the beginning God came out of nowhere to create the heavens and earths. What we consider the Universe." The Message says God created the Universe and more – that "more" we

---

<sup>5</sup> Excerpts from the Message on "NOWHERE" are in the last communication to The Lessons

consider to be the Kingdom of God, because, by its being outside of the Universe, it's free of and from all “material matter”! But I'm sure you all knew all this, right?

So, my dear Brothers, Sisters and Spirit Guides, you have before you a very unique paper that asks a lot of questions and has some unusual happenings that need meaningful solutions. You also need to find the blocks and barriers contained herein. I would like you all to exert the effort to come up with a collective discernment of this communication and all that it contains. I will be waiting.

In Love and Unity for everlasting Peace, here, there,  
everywhere,

I remain your brother and servant I, Paul,

Mystic of The Message of I Paul.

## **Lesson #15: Lucid Dreams VI**

### **Staying out of the Shadows, or, Understanding One's Resistance to Entering Into the Light of a Lucid Dream to Transcend**

Greetings to you my dear sisters and brothers and partners, you the Spirit Guides of The Order of Thirteen, Seated and Preparing to Practice and Follow The Way to “The Way” so that “Our” Coming will be no surprise to anyone.

Staying out of the shadows as Lucid Dreams #5 has said to us, is to avoid the “Nowhere” which primarily means to Prepare Now to avoid becoming doomed to a place we know as the Plane of “Earthboundedness” in the Future.

You live in The Now, but your Day is Future and you are, Right Now, creating Your Own Future and you do not seem to Care. Why? Let us together “see” Why.

Your primary Goal is Soul and your goal here is to Live the Good, the Right and the True Life for your Well-Being and the Very Well-Being of All in ALL. In doing this all your goals will be fulfilled, no ifs, no ands and no buts about it!

You see, to be “Real” and to “Act Natural” is not

difficult, and everything you Need to Do this with, you already have. When did you receive such things? The moment you were born. And, yes, it is true that you are the miracle you have been so long waiting for and you are the magic wand you have been in search of and you are The Way you have been pretending to Follow.

Yes, you are all those Things but you do not Live by nor display them. You are content to keep them in the shadows, forsaken, while you allow “self” to bask in the sunlight and to revel in the moonlight. I am not going to ask you why, but I sincerely hope you will ask yourself why.

You want to Transcend, yet you are not willing to Do those Things that are necessary to do so and are most certainly capable of doing anytime you make up your mind to DO IT.

I, Paul, being in possession of a sound mind, knows that whatever is sown Now in the darkness stays in The Darkness and that sown in the Light is reaped in the Light, so I stay out of the shadows thereby avoiding the Dark closet and keep company with the enlightened mind instead. Yes, I am proud and content to be a Spiritual entity, an image of God’s Image, with all the Love and Truth and compassion and intellect and Volition of God’s original.

Do I work for God? No! I work for “me,” for you and yours and the All in All “Happening.” Do I work with God? Yes, every day of my Life! And that my dear friends, is why I can Transcend among other things of great Spiritual Importance.

You see, every Human Being has the God Given Right to Transcend once. All other Transcendences are Privileges derived via Spiritual Gifts lying dormant in All of you, patiently awaiting your call to Action!

Did you know that Action begets Action? Well, you Do now.

And I’m sure you all know that God is not going to Do for you what you are fully capable of Doing for yourselves. From where I sit, I can’t see that that leaves God a hell of a lot to do and I’m sure that whatever it is Good that God has to do God will do on the Eighth Day. So let God rest and you get on with what it is you Need to Do, and yes, can Do.

By now you may be asking yourself what all of the above has to do with a Lucid Dream. Well, all of the above has to do with Transcending and since a Lucid Dream can and may be used as a vehicle to Transcend from, it has much to do with Lucid Dreaming, “see?” And I could say the same about meditation and the Trance States and Cogitation also, but not about prayer or contemplation.

The latter two cannot carry you out of body so they are not “vehicles” to transcend by, but some people use them to send messages through the veil.

### **- The Dark Closet and the Enlightened Mind -**

The dark closet is a house of illusions where no Real Person lives simply because there is no room available for such a one for “self” and its children occupy the whole space. That space, of course, is known to you as the lower mind, your mind, then, the dark closet, the house of illusions. Yet, when your predicament seems so black, there is a way out of the closet that can lead you to the Enlightened Mind to where you “see” everything and, therefore, never need to guess at anything again. (See Open Letter, 1991 – Book 6: Chapter 47 “The Year of the Real you”).

Saul of Tarsus (a religious fanatic and a man deeply controlled by “self”) while on the way to Damascus was blinded by the Enlightened Mind and was compelled to make a Choice and to his, our and the world’s benefit he made the Right One. So must you. And I, Paul, says you “must” because you haven’t as yet made the Right One.

You see, Paul, through Revelations (Receivings) and Visions (Dreams) of a Lucid Nature, was able to Transcend as well as have out of body experiences (See II Corinthians

12:1-4). He was able to do this because he made the Right Choice and then Acted upon it to Prepare himself to be the Apostle of the Light (see Romans 12:2 and Open Letter, 1991 – Book 6: Chapter 47 “The Year of the Real you” for the way he personally accomplished these things). What he received he gave away in order to make room for more receivings to give away and that’s how you received the Message of I Paul through me, this Family’s I, Paul. Are you “seeing” and “hearing” all this? We hope so.

Never before, in the history of this Earth W-303, have this many “Spirit Guides” gathered together in one place or as one Order. But you are only Spirit Guides in title and we all know the futility of titles where the Action is missing which would give real meaning and real Truth to such a title and therein give the same Meaning and Truth to the Order of Thirteen of the Family of LIFE and LIGHT of the All in ALL!

Until you become Real People and Real Spirit Guides and True Christian Spiritualists and learn to Act Natural “we” will know you as “The Illustrious Unknowns.”

“Once” you begin to Do the Will of God and learn that being a “Real person Acting Natural” has awesome rewards in the NOW! And since you are “Creating Your Future in the NOW” why, may “we” ask, are you adverse to

Prepare and then to Follow that very Preparation? Now allow “us” to answer for you so you will not incriminate yourselves with your excuses. Let’s face it, you are carnally minded and therefore most of your time is spent minding the things of the Flesh rather than the things of the Spirit, which you are!

Have you forgotten what you are in your Wholeness? “Our” advice is that each and every one of you, from this day onward and upward, make “What you are,” “Who you are,” and “Why you are” so that your Goal is implanted in your minds weighing upon your every thought and constantly on the tip of your tongue. And “we” shall add in chorus that if you desire above all desires To Transcend beyond your earth planes, you will Do these things for All in ALL.

Well! Now I, Paul, will continue on by telling you that when one becomes Real and learns to Live in the NOW, the constant Now becomes a New Age Now forever introducing you to a New NOW Age which will always be in all ways a New NOW by NOW!

Now that’s how those on the other side of “the gate” experience Life where even names are Changed in the process of this ever Changing NOW of Eternal Creation in the Eternal NOW and whatever takes place There

eventually takes its place Here in a similar way.

**- Resistance to Enter the Light of a Lucid Dream -**

In Lucid Dreams. #5, I, Paul, explained to you how I was able to escape from the last earth plane known as the earthbound plane by walking towards the Light of The Lucid Dream which led me into The Light of “the Gate” where I was beckoned to “Come Over.” Most people who find themselves in a strange dark place become immobilized by Fear (they “Freeze”) or they panic and lose control of their faculties (they “run in circles”). If you drop the “strange” from “strange dark places” they will eventually seek and find a way out, but, sadly, some remain in the darkness (they “Fail to Act”), and this is what happens in the Dark Closet if you don’t Act to get out of it or Open the door and let the Light come in.

If you cannot control your emotions while you are awake, then you cannot control them when you become “Awake” in a Lucid Dream either and this is one of the major “Resistances” against your ability to see the Light, enter it and Transcend or, at least, get out of your body. You see, that whenever you lose control of your emotions you lack concentration and these lacks often lead to acts of stupidity and you know that flesh and blood cannot enter the Kingdom and neither can run away emotions or the

likes.

As you can probably see by Now, “getting Organized” reaches into every aspect of your Life and organization is mandatory if you are going to be a “Real Person” and not a make-believe one.

The major reasons the majority of people scoff at meditation, self-induced Trance States, Psychic Powers (ESP, etc.) and Lucid Dreaming is Fear, Fear of the unknown. The Message of I Paul provides the necessary Spiritual, Psychical and Philosophical framework, or paradigms, through which one can appreciate that lucid dreaming (meditation, trances, psychic powers, ESP, etc.) is no less than an Inner Path to Illumination and Mystical Union – “A Light of the Dream State,” etc. an encounter with one’s “True-Self,” then. It is, then, an “Awareness of oneness with LIFE” and “Its Image, the LIGHT”! Yet, Individuality is preserved in these “Unions of Unity” while in the flesh of the vessel.

You are Life, mind and spirit entities and if you are a Real Person, you will know yourself as Yourself, and yet One with Spirit, or as I Paul stated you will know AT-ONE-MENT via the Uniting of The Opposites.

This Oneness with the Supreme SPIRIT is the task of all such entities as you, to fulfill their individual goals

which collectively is the Soul of the All in ALL. Only you can accomplish this by being Real and Doing All for your True-Self (yes “charity” does begin at home).

So, in saying that union with the Spirit is the destiny of all Humans here on W-303 is where the Message departs from traditional Judeo-Christian thought and practices. Typically, Christians and Jews alike have considered a harmonious relationship with a separate God to be the highest relationship to which they can aspire. This is exemplified by Moses’ receiving the 10 commandments from God. Although they may aspire to having a covenant with God, the relationship stops there. God remains on the mountain and only God’s commandments enter into their lives.

In Essence, The Message of I Paul extends and expands the involution and evolution of our Wholeness beyond the point where traditional Judeo-Christian religions claim it ends. They are horribly mistaken.

Christianity as generally practiced in its religious form, has been blocked and limited in its development. It’s not Real! It plays games with the minds of its membership and, worse, it plays games with LIFE and Its LIGHT. It’s not a way of Life but of death, and it is not concerned with the Well-Being of All – its only concern is the church,

period, and what the church fails to do is to accept the central teaching of Jesus (God then in their belief), namely, that oneness with God is the Ultimate Promise to all people, yesterday, today and tomorrow. While Jesus “thought it not robbery” to make himself One with God and say without any hesitation or pretense that “I and the Father are One” (and died for saying it the gospels claim). Most religionists have persisted in their thinking and practice that the most they can expect in their relationship with God is to have a covenant with a caring, but ultimately a separate, deity. And you can thank The Message that you work with God through this Oneness and not as a laborer Separated from his employer by many things.

Union, not merely covenant, is the Promise for us All in ALL. “See?” And you can prove all this and become your own witness through the Lucid Dream phenomena – IF you are Real, Organized and can Act Natural, then you, the seeker, will find that which you seek, while at the same time retaining your individuality and responsibility.

Besides providing a larger framework in which individual efforts toward mystical experience and union with Spirit and eventual Union with LIFE through the LIGHT, The Message also places a high premium on becoming aware of, and taking responsibility for, the

enduring record you have created with your thoughts and Actions. I, Paul, have already made it quite clear that right Now you are Creating your own Future. Yes, it's True, the Lord does work in mysterious ways with Justice for All!

Among other things this creative process involves is the cleaning-up of things already created by you such as, for example, old wounds, debts, broken promises and so forth. It is also very necessary that you become Fully Aware of How your minds are perpetually creating your Present Realities so that, hopefully, you can participate more responsibly in the Creative Process, here and Now for the Now and then.

And what, pray tell, are you all collectively attempting to, or supposed to be, creating? A New World is what and a New you is How. Once that is accomplished, we will step Upward and Address the New Worlds which The Message has already given you some insight into them, which is worthy of your reviewing.

Now you are dreaming and as you look around you cannot recognize anyone in your dream and you cannot see yourself, you “call” out for you and this “call” at once tells you that you have awakened to your dream mentally, but your body is in a sleep trance and you need to have it remain so.

1. Don't look for yourself in a Lucid Dream, you are there watching your Dream, deciding whether to get actively involved in it or not.
2. Do look for your True Self – it will be as a Light or it will be in your image somewhere in the Dream.
3. Either begin to work your way toward your True Self or let it know you are aware of its presence and that you are prepared and desirous of uniting for the purpose of an OBE. If you are accepted you will notice, almost at once, that you are now somewhere else, the Dream is gone and you realize you have United the Opposites and you should be able now to see you sound asleep.
4. It is then you come to realize that if that's you down there asleep, you are now seeing by vertical time and if that be so, you should Recognize at once that You are Free and being Free All of your Thinking is totally like you have never thought before. There's no "Self" there, there is no selfishness, nothing negative then, at all.

Where you go from here is up to the collective and united You which are Now and shall remain until you return to the body.

5. At this point in your OBE you should be “listening” for a call or “looking” for a distant Light. You either heed the call, if it comes, or advance toward the Light. If neither of them happens, you will not Transcend and the Reason is you are not Prepared nor Real, and since you carry Everything with you You are impure and therefore, barred from the Kingdom Planes of LIFE and the LIGHT. You won’t be upset by this simply because You cannot (no negatives, remember?). But you become anxious to return to the body, determined that on the next occasion you will be Real and Fully Prepared.

My dear brothers and sisters, that’s how very simple it All is, just like going for a stroll on a sunny day.

Now let me cover another resistance to entering into the Light of a Lucid Dream. These are primarily Fear, Doubt and Guilt.

When you go to sleep, in all probability you will dream, and if you have been Following this series on Lucid Dreams, you should be Prepared to act when you come to realize that you are conscious to the Dream but your body is sound asleep. So, you have no control of getting into a Lucid Dream or not to. It’s only after you are in the Dream

and Realize where you are that options open up to you. Your Conscience may tell you to stand by and simply take-in all that is going on in the Dream or you may decide to actively involve yourself in it and even attempt to take charge of it and direct the Action within it. If you decide to take the latter route, then you commit yourself to unite the opposites in order to totally take command of the Dream itself and with this thought in your mind the lower and higher minds will most likely join forces and it is here at this point that you become You and an OBE begins within an Earth Plane. It is prior to your decision to “take-charge” that Fear or Doubt or Guilt may place a barrier in your way to do so and at this point, whatever is the reason, the Dream usually ends by your awakening from the sleep trance state.

Right then and there you need to question yourself as to what caused your awakening. Were you afraid of uniting your opposites? Did you have any doubts about a possible OBE? Were you harboring some guilty matter in your mind about your preparation or of being unworthy to enter into such a union with its possibilities of both an OBE and a Transcendence? Or was there some other reason? Remember that you do not have to get involved in the Dream – you can remain a spectator and see what you can learn from the experience. Then, of course, there are

reasons that a Lucid Dream can be interrupted. Someone or something, a noise perhaps, may awaken you. You have no control over these and the best you can do is to concentrate deeply on the Dream and try to re-enter it once you fall asleep again.

(I, Paul, has recorded the above 5 steps in “milk” language, avoiding “strong meat” so that even a child can grasp it).

Going back to “things from your past” for a moment, allow me to say this: We are concerned about those things that you yourself created and tend to come to the forefront of your memory and interrupt your creative thinking in the Now. You see, as a member of “The Order” and IF you are Honestly, Sincerely and Faithfully on the Way to “The Way” then the Past is Past and there is nothing and no one for you to fear – except yourself. Furthermore, most of you have a problem in that the record of all your past creations are locked into your memory and will stay that way, so you only have to deal with those that you cannot forget – you know, the very ones your Conscience won’t let you forget (see A-1-8, Book 3, Chapter 9 – The Way – Plane I – Preparation, The Message).

**- The Minds - The Consciousnesses - Lucidity -**  
**[Subconscious - Conscious- Superconscious - Supraconscious]**

As you know, or should know, there is only One MIND, “The MIND,” then, LIFE, The Supreme Spirit, God, Soul, Truth, Love, then. Yet there is a multiplicity of Essences or “Essentials” of this One Mind, the MIND, then. I, Paul, Knows and you should at least believe that LIFE is Omnipotent, Omnipresent, and Omniscient.

Now you know what “the Mind” IS.

All Life, Human and Spirit, have minds which are essences of “the Mind” and, therefore, are Essentials of IT, and these are known to us as the lower mind, the higher mind, and the Mind of Christ (which, incidentally, we demonstrated to you in our Open Letter to the Family – 1991, Book 6: Chapter 47 “The Year of the Real you,” just how to Fully Activate this Mind of Christ which is in us.).

The subconscious is not to be confused with, nor thought of, as the Subliminal or the non-existent unconscious mind (read The Message). The subconscious is that which allows you to do more than one thing at a time and to do them with little or no perception of having done them.

I, Paul, does not believe that I need to explain what “Conscious” means to any of you who are here and awake.

The Superconsciousness belongs to the Image of LIFE,

Its LIGHT and, therefore, knowing this I need not explain to whom The Supraconscious belongs.

Lucidity is to become enlightened or aware of something or other (quick to grasp something) and to be rational about it.

So, what goes on in a Lucid Dream that you need be aware of? Plenty, and I'll fill you in on it All in Lucid Dreams #7 and #8.

Love and Peace,  
I, Paul, Mystic of “The Family”  
with the J's

Z

Note: Refer to “The Story,” Parts 1 and 2 for Lucid Dreams

#7 and #8, respectively.

## NOWHERE

### Excerpts from The Message...

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\1990\1990.1-3

LINE: 273

..be All things to All People unless you have actually experienced all the things people have had to go through (and I do not mean here, everything, like name calling, or sticks and stones of a petty nature, gossip, etc.). Those are things that come from your god damned meanness, and nowhere else. So, what is the explanation of this “Mystery” Man, and, or, Woman? And it is actually a “mystery name” and, or, title (mystic, I mean). It’s a symbolic term which actually has no

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\1990\1990.4

LINE: 405

..the “Necklace” and on to the “Nectar” of it all but where lies this nectar we speak of? In your support of us? In your contributions to this “Family”? NO! It lies, my dear brothers and my dear sisters, in your contributions to

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

yourself, first, for without that, you ain't going nowhere!  
In fact, you ain't been anywhere!

Is all the above my viewpoint? No, I think not I'm not  
that damn original. I listen to the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -1990\FAITH-90

LINE: 150

..dreams and visions, and Faith in the Good Fairy  
godmother. None of this Faith has anything to do with LIFE  
and the LIGHT and everything to do with Faith in ONESELF  
which is good, mind you, but without enjoining that SELF-  
FAITH with a Higher and Spiritual Faith, you will go  
nowhere, regardless of how much time it takes to get  
there! And when you finally get there don't expect a  
welcoming committee, for there will be none. The Spirit of  
Death and the Spirit of Darkness do not constitute a  
committee.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -1990\FAITH-90

LINE: 431

..now on a one way ticket are you really prepared for this?

Go ahead and lie to me your lies can't hurt me you're the one who will suffer if you go that route.

All we ask, from any one of you, is that you stop, look and Listen, and once having done so apply some Common Sense and cease whining over the fact you are getting nowhere you're getting nowhere simply because you cannot decide which program, which philosophy, which teaching can get you there!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -1990\L&D

LINE: 680

..eyes and the mouth of the deceased are closed, and then the face should be covered (this chore preferably done by a relative or a very close friend).

3. (While it has become a tradition with the religionists to have a minister, a priest, or a rabbi present in the last moments of the dying to administer “last rites” etc., nowhere in the “Book of the Two Ways” nor in the “Book of Life” is this ever suggested as a requirement, nor as a help). Three

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -1990\L&D

LINE: 781

some of these often untrue, and far, far below the high ethical practice the public has come to expect of the medical profession. It is interesting that one such argument often advanced is, “there are on record authoritative statements from religious leaders of all faiths indicating that nowhere is there any justification for opposition to autopsies on religious grounds.” Now it does say “religious leaders” and “on religious grounds,” neither of which we Spirituals have anything in common with, but, the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\–BOOK1\BOOK1.3

LINE: 161

em out. I Pray that you harbor no such foolishness as defiance. Further, you press me with questions on matters you are capable of answering yourself.

No, dear laborer, for now, you traverse nowhere. You must work exceedingly harder than heretofore, to receive and digest all that I pass on to you in a near continuous cycle. You have no time to travel as yet. Your Counsel may do so if he wishes. For until he fills his house, lays aside his housekeeping, relegates secretarial work to a secretary,

and absolutely ends his wasting of time, he will go nowhere with us. He has not made a full effort in attempting to accomplish this task. Without his accomplishing these tasks, he will not be in a position to be your Counsel full time, nor will he be in a position to study for what lies ahead for him in our plans.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.02

LINE: 185

..how hard I tried. Then this voice said, “It is good you come. I Paul, a prisoner in Jesus, the Christ, welcome you and wish to enlighten you on your belief that Jesus was the incarnate of God.” Out of nowhere, or somewhere, I was filled by a light that felt warm and comfortable, and I was standing alone but watching a scene unfold before me as Paul spoke to me. “You have been chosen. You have much good work to do. Listen and watch, now, that which is before you.” I was watching the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.02

LINE: 578

..to confuse the mighty - for God has chosen such a plan

that is despised by the world, and counted as foolish  
nothing by them, and we will use it to bring down to  
nothing those the world now considers great. God so  
intends for that. nowhere on earth can any man boast in  
the presence of God Almighty, for if anyone is going to  
boast, let him boast only of what the Lord, our God, has  
done. Now, I am a son of God, in that I recognize God, and  
yet, I am not a son of God in the sum of our

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.03

LINE: 987

..in the turning of the other cheek. I seek no justice for  
myself, only God's loving Grace and Mercy. My spirit is full  
of a love of God, its Joy and Happiness are my recompense  
and is beyond words. My heart is everywhere and nowhere,  
and it is jealous of its love. My total commitment to my  
fulfilling the Divine Will for me is as pure an act of love as I  
am capable of and still be conscious and in compliance with  
the command that I act natural. I must sometimes serve in  
silence, but I must

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.04

LINE: 354

..his level, his plane of thought. Superconsciousness knows no evil or disease or pain. It is non-existent in reality yet real in the mental concept of man's mind. Mind is non-existent, yet you are nowhere near ready for such truths as that. So let us go over this again quickly. It takes courage to fear, and especially to fear the unknown. albeit such fear be misdirected, mis-used and directly opposite of the Will of God for man. Fear suppresses action or promote

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.04

LINE: 620

You wonder if your first counsel will do likewise shortly. Let me again say this to you and to your entire family. Until he can grasp the meaning and apply the effort to all that Communication Number Forty-five has laid at his feet, he will go nowhere. D.L. has applied the effort on a daily basis in an honest, open-minded manner. He did very little procrastinating. Your first counsel still reads the words on paper, he has yet to learn to peel them off and put them into action. He wastes

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.05

LINE: 278

..oneself instead of listening to God.” (See James 4:17).  
Now, God guarantees that history is going somewhere. Yet no one but God Almighty Himself knows where. A belief in God guarantees a believer that the road of life is going somewhere and not nowhere, we mustn’t even speculate where or try to even guess. It is God’s prerogative to reveal it to us in His own mysterious way. This is where faith comes in, for faith is the betting of your life that there is a God. Keep the faith, simply means, keep on betting your life that there is a God even when the evidence

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.05

LINE: 629

sense, while is also absent itself from others. Man has known down through history that faith holds many hidden keys to locks as yet inaccessible to man, yet man continually turns his back on faith to grasp at passing fancies which lead to nowhere. Yet many feel an urgency to arrive there ahead of everyone else. “Show me the error of my ways” shouted Job to our God. Do you recall the answer given? It was a classic and it applies to one and all of you as

well today as it was well in the days of

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.06

LINE: 273

Loneliness is not escape, it is incarceration and the warden is your excessivism. You're an alien slave and you feast off yourself like a cannibal. You play God and you kneel at the altar of self not knowing that God kneels nowhere and to no thing. Escape is the eternal theme of your contemplation, escape, escape, escape! But the one thing you cannot seem to escape, the thing you truly believe you want to escape is yourself and that is impossible. There is no stillness anymore as you lay a ruin among your ruins and your strength lie

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.07

LINE: 751

Stop being so obstinate and begin preparing in total self-honesty. It isn't easy, not by any means, but some of you are not even trying, and believe me, you are going nowhere if you insist on doing things your way. You are sound asleep, as soon you will be left behind to continue doing

just that, sleeping. As the Holy Transcendent God is my judge, I pray for you fervently, but I know that God

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -BOOK2\BOOK2.07

LINE: 956

..east of men. Don't tie yourself down to the rich or powerful of the world for you will one day be the powerful and the responsibility of it all is awesome. Get rid of your inclinations to court the great and influential by man's standards for they are going nowhere and otherwise you would gravely deform the image of the Church of the All in All. Put your trust in God, your guides and your teachers. I Paul instructs me to wait for God's mercy, His grace and for all, in All. Above all take

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -LESSON\LESSON.1

LINE: 423

Man is still Cain, and he needs to become Able. You, in the meantime, need to study and practice those matters before you. You need to carefully follow the instructions. If the barriers are not removed, we can go nowhere and do nothing. The choice is yours. You were not promised an

easy road. That some of you are still totally ignoring I Paul’s specific instructions to you is true, and until you systematically sit down and work it out, you will go nowhere and accomplish nothing.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -THEOSTM\THEOL.1

LINE: 65

..but foremostly, that all such claims and counterclaims are nonsense Products of our imaginations. There is no pure history of revelation nor a pure understanding of revelation in history!

I say to all religionists, stop listening to echoes that have led you nowhere and which are definitely dead ends. Begin Now to hear the voice, which has no dead end It’s eternity is eternal.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\ -THEOSTM\THEOL.2

LINE: 476

Now we have Inner and Outer Circles high sounding, perhaps, but what we are most concerned with is the outer and inner life of people.

If we do not work on our inner life and bring it forward we are going nowhere.

Stick to the stones of the road the hard yellow bricks, for in the long run you will find them less tiring than the side paths of soft earth.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\1984-89\#YOU\_CAN

LINE: 182

Until you have achieved mastery over your “self” and drop all of your illusions of grandeur and stop intellectualizing and rationalizing your way of life and get into the True Way of Life, the Spiritual Way, you are “going” nowhere.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\1984-89\#ISTHERE.GOD

LINE: 162

Is there a God - LIFE?

Is there a Supreme Being, a Spirit?

Is there a First Cause?

Is there an Infinite - Eternal Uncreated Being?

Very simply, the answer lies in another question and nowhere else.

What do you Think?

For the early Hebrew mind, the existence of God was not a subject of debate as it is today. The Old Testament simply begins with the assumption, "In the beginning, God -----."

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\1984-89\FAMILY.88

LINE: 478

Furthermore, evil men and women of this Earth who live, and have lived in rebellion against LIFE and Life are nevertheless compelled to serve LIFE involuntarily. LIFE can, and does, weave even the evil ones into his intricate design for the whole universe. nowhere does the New Testament bless anyone for crucifying Christ Jesus nor does it exalt Judas Iscariot for his betrayal. Yet, it teaches, as does the Message which teaches it much better, that the Cross, the Truth of the Cross,

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\1984-89\RESURR.88

LINE: 150

..the translation of “he was seen” for being “made manifest” does not exactly fit the description in Scripture of what transpired on “that road” to Paul the blinding Light, the voice out of nowhere, and the being struck down to the ground (“manifest” literally means to be struck by the hand). To therefore translate Paul’s “ophthe” as “he was seen by me” in view of the above three “happenings” is

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK3\BOOK3.2

LINE: 413

his heirs, and we have turned our backs on them, on self, our inner self, our spirit being, as we evolve into a new society of flesh and blood entities with no place to go. Foxes have earths, birds have nests, egos have graves, but the son of man had nowhere on earth that he could call his own to go to, and for you to follow him, neither may you. As Adam came a vital soul of earth and was made small, the heavenly Messiah came as a living Spirit into the flesh of Jesus to unite the earth with the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK3\BOOK3.5

LINE: 298

What all of you need to understand, and by now, at this late date I fail to see how you cannot, is that until you have order in your life on a day-by-day basis and it trickles down into all things you do as both Church members and Inner Circle members we will “go nowhere”! The order of the Church life is embedded into the order of its evangelist as the order of the Inner Circle is embedded in its membership. It is an individual responsibility first and then a collective responsibility that comes with the dawning of its unity. Honesty is called for but not simply “rigid honesty” but “ruthless honesty” for without it we will “go nowhere”!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK3\BOOK3.6

LINE: 505

one word for the devil ignorance! It is in the light of truth, faith, love that we live this life for it is the life of charity that leads us to the life of agapé. Love, whose center is everywhere, and its circumference nowhere is the circle we reside in. We are to be real men and real women revealing God as God is actually revealed in us. It is the whole which

now begins to live in those prepared, whose ends and aims and desires we appropriate at the sacrifice of our private and separate ends. But

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK3\BOOK3.6

LINE: 847

the light of truth, faith, love that we live this life for it is the life of Charity (all that that implies) that leads us to the “life of agapé” the “real life” (unity). Love is the circle we reside in; it is the circle whose center is everywhere and its circumference nowhere. Does your life reflect reveal God or “self”? Or do you sacrifice your private and separate ends for the sake of unity? You cannot claim in honesty nor in truth, to be prepared unless you can first demonstrate your unity among yourselves

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK4\BOOK4.1

LINE: 257

publications” or books on mysteries. Unless you understand the Message and until you do comprehend its language, all such reading only clouds the way. They may “sound” like the Message or “read” like the Message, but

they are poles apart. The “keys” lie in the Message and nowhere else. The Message must come first – until it does, we (collectively) will go nowhere – do nothing – accomplish no-thing. The Message clearly spells out all these things herein – sooner or later they will become recognizable and then action – effort – must come before we can!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK4\BOOK4.1

LINE: 365

If the promises of The Message are ever to come true they can only come true by direct, supernatural intervention in human affairs so that the truth behind the formula of Prepare – Follow – Come is the guarantee that such a life can never be a path that leads nowhere for it is The Way which leads to God. (To understand this is to understand The Message – to understand The Message is to understand this). Now let us proceed along the lines of the title of this communication – A

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK4\BOOK4.4

LINE: 317

The Supreme Spirit’s Way is not our way, its thoughts are not our thoughts. We have not been fully prepared to see that what we have supposed would speed things up may very well be a barrier to them – rushing forward blindly will get us nowhere – it has been correctly said that without Faith we could not exist – we could not carry on. But now it has to teach us more of the Way – so that we may have the certainty that in our affairs a Spiritual Plan is functioning – not independent of us but through us.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK5\BOOK5.2

LINE: 200

array of ceremonial rules, that the true worship of God is secondary. All religions in the world, Christian or non-Christian have found rules, rites, and ceremonies necessary to hold on to their flocks, a battle which many of them are losing. There exists nowhere in the world a purely spiritual (in the sense of “formless”) religion. The difficulty is, and probably will remain for a while longer, that so many human beings think superficially it is very much easier to adopt a practice than to dwell on

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK5\BOOK5.2

LINE: 871

The Supreme Spirit's Will is all there is. We can go but from nothingness to everything, from darkness to light. Is this a journey? No, not in truth, for Truth goes nowhere. But illusions drift from place to place, from "time" to "time." The final step is also but a shift. As a perception it is part unreal. And yet this part will vanish. What remains is Peace Eternal and the Will of the Supreme Spirit. There are no wishes now for wishes change. Even the wished for can become

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK5\BOOK5.2

LINE: 955

its effect must still be one. Where there was darkness, we now see the light. What is the self? What the darkness was! Where is the "self"? Where the darkness was. What it is now and where can it be found? Nothing and nowhere. Now the light has come, the opposite has gone without a trace. Where evil was there is now good. What is the "self"? What the evil was! Where is the "self"? In an evil dream that but seemed real while you were dreaming it. Where there was crucifixion stands

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK5\BOOK5.3

LINE: 400

in your household. Furthermore, you must have an absolutely Free hand in raising and nurturing your children, and see to it that they are Raised Up in a nonviolent Atmosphere and an Environment of Ideals that can be found nowhere Else except in a Truly Christian Spiritualist household, knowing that if this is done “Life” will give you all the Strength you will ever need and More. You may ask, how much Effort does it take to Raise a Family like yours? You know, you do it every single day of your life! How great your effort is, tells you Just how qualified you are as Parents,

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\BOOK5\BOOK5.5

LINE: 525

life is beyond my comprehension. Probably beyond that of any competent doctors. I know while the physician doesn't. The secret lies in Creative Thought and Creative Imagination and in the Mind of Christ. Just there and nowhere else. I repeat. Getting here was easy. Getting out of here in good stead is almost impossible. That's why I Paul said don't waste your time studying man. Study Mind.

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

Learn mind. Practice mind. Follow Mind. Prepare, Follow,  
Come is all Mind, no element even

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-01

LINE: 151

been waiting for and as yet has truly attempted the full, the  
earnest, the honest effort to prove it.

Everybody is waiting on “Life” to do it for them Again!  
“Life” won’t but life can! It’s all so simple that it’s simply  
devastatingly difficult to believe! And to do it in a state of  
“self” is impossible, illusions get you nowhere and no  
things! Can you see now why you don’t know what you  
think you know. You, the big You knows everything but  
you, the little you, won’t listen simply because “self,” an  
illusion is in the Way!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-21

LINE: 141

Now if you couple these questions with three previous  
questions dealing with signs and a magic wand and answer  
them, we will tell you this: If you say no to a single

question, you are not a Christian Spiritualist and nowhere even remotely on the Way to becoming a true Christian Spiritualist for You are not prepared and not honestly attempting to become one.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-26.B

LINE: 492

you and you and You do not have Unity below and therefore you and You can have no Unity Above! Until you do have Unity, nothing you say, nothing you do, then, that is not for Unity, of Unity and in Unity is waste! Has not The Message told you that without Unity you can do nothing - go nowhere? Of course, it has but you do not listen! The Law of Unity is One Mind, therefore it is Soul! In Unity there can be Absolutely Nothing but Peace! For in Unity and Peace there is One! There is “Life”! Can you now “see” that there is not a single thing you cannot do if you have Unity - one mind! Oh, what blind and deaf fools you be! Communication three, page three, “Remember

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-26.C

LINE: 383

So, as he (Saul) journeyed, it came to pass that he drew nigh unto Damascus and suddenly there shone round about him a light from nowhere it seemed and which engulfed him and he fell upon the earth and he heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, "Who art thou, Lord"? And he said, "I am the Christ who thou persecutest - but rise and enter into the city and it will be told you what you must do." And the men who journeyed with him,

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-26.D

LINE: 685

The Way is always the Way except when it is not the Way which is never but always.

Now can you see that if we sent the entire Message in this manner where you and it would be at this very moment? nowhere! "See"?

Now from a section of a book of "Life" for all "Ages" we give you this as a key.

When the Faiths of the Mind are completely Recognized in their One Yet Triune understanding it will be immediately recognized that all Form and Shape

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

originated in the Creative

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-26A.1-2

LINE: 359

I hold up an object in my hand for you to see. Do you see it? Fine, now close your eyes. Can you still “See” it? If you can you too may be an I Paul for it is that simple!!! How it could be any simpler I cannot even “Imagine”! It’s All in The Mind dear Friends, nowhere else! You can do everything I have done and More! Jesus said that. Believe it or not dear Friends, it is The Truth, the Whole Truth and Nothing but the Truth, so “Life” help us All!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-27

LINE: 662

“Omnidirection” is simply the power or the ability to send or receive in or at any direction in Space (it must be remembered that everything, everywhere is in Space!)

“Omnipresent” simply means being everywhere at the very same time and moment. It also means having the Power to be Everywhere and nowhere all at the same

moment in time, in Space, in Cosmos, in Universe, and any other place it feels that needs its presence as a Dimension of Awareness!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29

LINE: 529

the Vatican – from which Pius IX sent a block of marble, ironically taken from the Pagan Temple of Concord in Rome. But even these contributions were nowhere sufficient to do the job, and the society’s board of managers appealed to Congress to take whatever action it deemed proper. A select committee recommended a subscription of \$200,000, the exact sum originally voted in 1799, but

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29A.13

LINE: 353

The Inherited Thought runs along the vein of “as it was in the beginning, is, and ever shall be.” A sort of eternal now, wherein, nothing really changes, “in the infinite, the nothingness, the nowhere, and the dark.”

The Creative Thought Force is as a constant breath of fresh air, the sunshine of an eternal questing for the new, the bright, the good, the right and the true, while never forgetting the same from the past – never forsaking them. Always keeping them Alive. Both in the past and the present

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29A.23

LINE: 265

Adam, the first man, somewhat corresponds to the man to come. But the gift of LIFE, through the LIGHT, is a very different matter than “account rendered” through the disobedience of Adam. [I, Paul note although it is translated as the “sin of Adam,” and that even in the singular, nowhere in the Creation narrative is the Word sin used!] For while as a result of man’s disobedience death by natural consequence became the common lot of mankind here, it was by the generosity of the Supreme Spirit, the free gift of grace, and of Righteousness, shall reign in life by one man,

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29A.25

LINE: 450

correct, reprove, attack! For the greater part, although not exclusively, the “sayings” and “riddles” of Jesus are weapons of warfare! Every one of them calls for immediate response (Action, then!).

Let me draw you a picture.

Along comes a man, seemingly out of nowhere, who has already been announced as coming by an ascetic prophet. This preannounced personage does not “comeout” as an ascetic or as a religionist of his day and Nation, but as an eater and drinker, or, as the religious leaders called him, “a glutton and a wine bibber,” a man who ate with and associated with “sinners and whores.” This

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29A.25

LINE: 695

..(Daniel 7:4; Ezra 13, etc.). However, in this saying Son of Man is used in a non-apocalyptic sense, just as it is used in a proverb “Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests, but the son of man has nowhere to lay his head” (Matthew 8:20 Luke 9:58). What the proverb and the

similitude of the children in the market places have in common is the idea of homelessness, an idea associated with the figure of Wisdom in Proverbs, and it might be that the community or communities that came

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29A.26

LINE: 434

rich man's spirit that Abraham may send the spirit of the beggar to warn his five human brothers. So, Jesus both comments on a social problem as well as a spiritual one, i.e., a way to keep one's true-self out of the darkness. The riddle condemns the lack of love among neighbors, unrighteousness, and impenitence. nowhere does it say, nor imply, that Jesus' position is that wealth in itself merits "hell," and that poverty in itself is rewarded by paradise (although this is what the church taught for a long, long time).

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-29A.END

LINE: 55

Therefore, while OBE's are becoming more and more common, transcending remains a rarity, even for those

who have mastered the art, simply because All Transcendings are preceded by a “call,” and then by “instructions.” OBE’s in and of themselves have their dangers but nowhere near the magnitude inherent in all Transcendences.

Now I, P, have transcended. I don’t believe I have nor do I simply assume I have, I “know” I have for it has been “confirmed by Spirit” and by my reports of same. No one transcends

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-30\CPM30.01

LINE: 543

This implies Causation without Supernaturalism and, get this, Supernaturalism without nature! This is another Master Key but nowhere has it been applied to Creation except through pure and true Spiritualism.

Yet so applied, it becomes that natural key so necessary to sound knowledge of ourselves, the earth, the world, the spaceship, and the Universes! It means, as we said, the end of superstition and

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-30\CPM30.03

LINE: 173

Attempt to discern and come to a complete understanding of the following for when CPM #30 is completed we guarantee you will know what the Ancients knew and it will be respected and desired by the many. Now listen:)

All of Creation was Created mutable for that is all evolution really is. nowhere in the bible does it say God made you to sleep or in other words to remain ignorant of the Truth. The Future is yours, ours, but at the moment it lies in peaceful repose, unmourned by All, biding its Time and

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-30\CPM30.03

LINE: 690

Jesus could not have consummated the destined Sacrifice. This mutual dependence was, or is, that of consciousness and energy, Unity and Peace.

In the genealogy given in Matthew we are told that Jacob begat Judas and his brethren. nowhere else does the bible use the name Judas for Judah, Jacob's son, - but now the Truth is out - the Judas of the New Testament is the Judas of the Old. His father, Jacob, represents the Creator

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

on the third plane, and his sons Judas and his brethren, are the differentiated aspects of

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-30\CPM30.05

LINE: 725

We have driven home the fact of the dishonesty of Catholic and religious Christianity scholarship. nowhere is it more evident than in the whitewash of wicked popes. Their crimes were all done by others and “unavoidable,” the burning and torture of heretics, “a necessity of the times,” their debaucheries but “love of good cheer.” All save three that even they cannot whitewash, were

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\CPM\CPM-30\CPM30A.2

LINE: 349

The religionists can’t even see what an Old Testament “Man of God” is like, nor its God, for that matter. To Satan they attribute every cruelty, crime and evil, but nowhere can they find a Satan as satanic as the god of the Old Testament, which is no God at all! Where is its God of Love and Mercy, of Justice, of Truth? You can examine the books of the Old Testament from now until

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\DISCERN\DISCERN.9

LINE: 44

Now let us address ourselves to Roads with Dead Ends. We have seen that there is the Way and not the way, and we have tried to mark out the steps in finding the Way. Having put our feet on the Way – firmly, I trust – we may now look at some roads with dead ends. For many people starting out on the Way get sidetracked onto dead ends. Many people starting upon the Way get sidetracked into Ways that lead nowhere. We shall look at sixteen roads that lead to the never-never land.

The signs that we shall put up over these dead-end roads are commandments: “thou shalt not enter.” That sounds dogmatic and authoritarian, but in reality, these ordinances are really the distilled experience of the race. We shall look at some areas of how humanity, through

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\DISCERN\DISCERN.1

LINE: 428

In this lower realm, this Land of God we patch up Peace on a continuous basis for it always turns out to be NO

Peace at all because the other six Pillars have been ignored!

All this patching up is a real crazy quilt work of expedience here, there, everywhere but in truth, nowhere at All. I thought I heard someone say "Life is Crazy," when it was repeated, I found it to be "Life is Hazy," but since I hold recognition I said, "Life is crazy simply because it is hazy!" After all, man has been looking in a glass darkly ever since he landed here on this, our spaceship Earth!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\DISCERN\DISCERN.7

LINE: 55

"As he thinketh within himself or herself so is he or she." That's a statement of the Law of Life and hell I didn't write that. I simply re-recorded it. Yet, I do know, that that Law has no exception. Can you grasp that? We develop the capacity to do that which we set out to do if we pay attention. Not only to ourselves but to our true selves. If one makes no beginning one goes nowhere. "In idle wishes fools supinely stay. Be there a will, and wisdom will find the way."

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\DISCERN\DISCERN.7

LINE: 363

waivered in that Faith nor that imagination. He believed that it was possible to Unite all of mankind, regardless of race, creed or otherwise. He gave his Life up for that Unity. He Loved.

He left us with a great message. Without Unity, without Sharing and Caring in everything we think, in everything we do and in everything we have set our hearts and minds upon we can go nowhere.

The Message opens the Way for All to obtain the Mastery over their hearts and minds and bodies. This mastery is to become fully human and leads to our becoming Fully Spiritual. The Message, then, is the Way to regain one's status as a son or daughter of God. That's Unity at its

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\DISCERN\DISCERN.8

LINE: 531

When the Family comes up to Recognition that I am I Paul and “T” is me and “DL” is of the same mold, we, you, just might begin to get somewhere. Until that happens you will get nowhere.

I, "P," Mystic at Large have learned and learned well from the Message that regardless of how distasteful it may be you had better follow the leader. The leader or leaders are Spirit designated. You can follow nothing else. I'm free - and happy. Only the Truth can make you free. That's the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\DISCERN\DISCERN.8

LINE: 573

(b) You may be Prepared to change everything, but only partially. You may be prepared to turn around in everything but to turn around partially. You may cut down on a habit instead of cutting it. You may end indecisively, leaving yourself neither here nor there. That will get you nowhere. All compromise will end in confusion. Chaos!

(c) You may be hindered from a clear-cut change by putting off the time of it. Augustine's Prayer before he was converted was "O' God make me pure but not now"! He wanted to be pure but he wasn't willing to bring it into the "now" - which meant he truly didn't want it. For you do not

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\GBI\PJWYPES.GBI

LINE: 136

On the building of churches, shrines, etc.:

Religious or public edifices remain where they are and are nowhere seen except in that particular area or part of the earth where they exist, but good men and women are conspicuous wherever they are and go and wherever they are talked about, and so they can magnify and attract the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\I-ALC\I-ALC.3

LINE: 580

You see A.A. owes me nothing and it never has. Yet I owe A.A. everything. I'll never be able to do enough for A.A. I used to sit around and think to myself how the heck did these people get so well and so happy, and I kept wishing I could. Sitting and thinking will get you nowhere really, even though it may give you some direction. I finally realized that if I was ever going to have what the real winners had, then I had better stop sitting, thinking and wishing and get off my backside and get into action. Action faithfully applied with courage and perseverance got me on the path to

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.14

LINE: 121

And now to deepen the tragedy, the Christian Religion and its multiple theologians (who, incidentally, cannot agree with each other and therefore deepen the schism) stumble again blindly when they attempt to describe and justify Satan and Hell as truths, which, in fact, in Reality and in truth, do not exist as they picture it. The Truth is that Satan and Hell exist nowhere else except here, right here on this Earth Surprised? Don't be.

Men and women who spurn God, who do evil are the real Satans and their evil acts are what creates, constitutes hell on earth. What these “satans” do not understand or do not care about is the truth that they incur the Wrath of the Supreme Spirit and the Spirit withdraws its presence from

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.18

LINE: 184

“Recognition”! and they show it! By their Fruits ye shall know them, and we do. And the “self,” being an illusion, isn't really all that difficult to shed. When you are totally absorbed in something, oblivious to all that surrounds you

there is no “self” present. Where did “it” go? nowhere. It wasn’t there to begin with. What has happened is simply the fact that your attention has been diverted, subconsciously, from thoughts of your self, your wants and your selfishnesses including your visions of self-importance. That’s how easy it really is to be free of “self” and when you come out of this semitrance state “self” doesn’t automatically reinject itself into your consciousness, it can’t, no, you

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.19

LINE: 86

The mind and the spirit are not flesh and blood. There is a physical body and there is a spiritual body W303. There is an Etheric body and there is a Life body E303. There is an Astral body and there is a Light body N303. There is a planetary body and a Cosmos body S303.

Hence the “missing link” hasn’t been found on this Earth. It is simply not of this Earth. nowhere, in any of the above, is there to be found a “soul body” per se. The Supreme Spirit is Soul, the very self-existing LIFE, then. The Soul then is Spirit, a Self-Existent Spirit, having no End and no Beginning Uncreated, then, and being

Uncreated remains Eternally uncreated but most Creative!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.21

LINE: 380

another occasion he said only those who did the Will of his Father were his mother and brethren, clearly indicating that his mother, brothers and sisters did not! Even from the Cross he called his mother “Woman” and designated someone else as “her” son.

nowhere in the gospels does Jesus have a kind word for his mother, in fact he ignores her, rejects her and rebukes her and these gospels clearly imply that Jesus’ mother had no faith in him nor his goals and there simply doesn’t appear to be any case for this Mary whom so many hail except the one the church was forced to make when they made a human being God and God a human being

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.30

LINE: 625

concisely spelled out herein and in the Entire Message of I Paul, to date! It’s a learning, self-disciplining, doing,

demonstrating, thinking, practicing, loving, faithful, principled, diligent, devoted and effortful process. It’s simple, yes! But it’s hard work. Perfunctory demonstration gets you nowhere! Anger, temper, hate, frustration and their ilk “killeth the spirit” as well as “the Word.” Killing “self” and “slaying fear” is a lot easier and much more beneficial!

You can do it! In fact, only you and You can do it! And since you are never alone, it becomes that much more simple. “See”?

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.31

LINE: 24

a direct, personal, intimate relationship with LIFE and LIGHT, where the element of immediacy is primal, and not through the intermediary of some other person or agency or organization here.

To Jesus, the national Religion of his people was an endless road that went nowhere. Spiritualism was a road, a way to “The Way” on which every step in that direction counted.

His Spiritual Psychology was twofold. It consisted of

the kingdom of heaven and the Kingdom of God. Jesus’ spiritual psychology was based on the fact that every person intuitively knew that there was a highway of right living and that men and women are never completely satisfied with

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.33A

LINE: 309

love, love as possession, love of beauty, love as pain, as obsession, love of life, and so forth. Each of these types of “love” carries with it a very different understanding of Reality as well as a diverse assumption concerning what it means to be human.

None of these types alone approaches that which is True Love and even collectively they come nowhere near what is Pure Love. One type of love that many men and women hold to is Love of Country, some go so far as to say “Right or wrong I Love my Country. What this so-called love is, is just another way of expressing one’s belief in two masters God and Country.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.33B

LINE: 65

mind. A mind without Ideals and Creative Ideas is not an Active, vibrant, vigorous nor Free mind such minds do not Travel. Therefore, without an Ease of mind, without autonomous self-determination, without Freedom of thought and Imagination and the Self-Discipline to manifest them, you and You are going nowhere together. Further still, If your day is Future then you had better DO Something Now to ensure that promise. Procrastinations, foolishnesses, petty wants and outright laziness and aloofness from what is clearly your Responsibility in this lifetime will avail you Absolutely Nothing, Zero plus Zero is still Zero, here and There.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.33B

LINE: 104

faithfulness in purpose and the motivation to fulfill that “something” Recognized and Remembered in All their words, Acts and Deeds.

The differences here are not those of a Physical Nature but clearly those of a Spiritual one. The lonely, the wishful thinkers, the idlers, the lovers of the old, the past, the stuck in ones, then, who walk alone and are lonely and

going nowhere and for who the darkness can only become darker. And those who know and understand that they are never alone. These are the ones who walk after, walk in, and walk with the Spirit for all Things that are Good, Right and True in the Now for that day, their Day, which is Future. And all of this is a very simple matter of the minds. One dull,

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.33E

LINE: 78

Christian Spiritualism alone reveals to us the connection of the Lower Mind to the ONE Mind and the True Meaning of Predestination. You see, the human brain, unlike the Lower Mind, has no moving parts and therefore it goes nowhere it was formed here and it stays here.

Our next word is “Key.” This signifies the Power of Opening, the Act of Opening, and being Open. The Key or the Keys of the Kingdom symbolizes the True Self which occupies the Central Position between the Higher and the Lower Kingdoms or the Kingdom of LIFE and the Kingdom

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\IPAUL\IPAUL.33D

LINE: 8

The oldest known Symbol for God is the 0, the 1, the ONE, The circle as the symbol of God is expressed in this way: God is a circle, the center of which is everywhere and the circumference nowhere.

Number wise, depending on which cult, sect, or religion you study, God is either 1, 3, 5, 7, 9, or zero, or a combination of some, even. Those who use 9 follow one esoteric formula and those who use ONE or 1, another. A zero can mean Ten in some systems, a + (plus) in others, a (minus) in

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\PREACH\PREACH.031

LINE: 122

If the promises of The Message are ever to come true they can only come true by direct, supernatural intervention in human affairs so that the truth behind the formula of Prepare - Follow - Come is the guarantee that such a life can never be a path that leads nowhere for it is The Way which leads to God. (To understand this is to understand The Message - to understand The Message is to understand this). Now let us proceed along the lines of the title of this communication - A New Year - Its Needs

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

etc. – What was significant for us in the word  
“disbandment”?

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\PREACH\PREACH.031

LINE: 503

Further – Acts 3:13 refers directly to Isaiah 52:13 – In Acts 3:26 Jesus is called “Pais” as he is later commonly called “Christ” (Messiah) – the earliest Christology of the Jewish-Christians then was really a Paidological doctrine – Acts – Chapters 3 and 4 attest to this and the “name” appears nowhere else in the New Testament – only in the beginning of Acts which is the Jewish-Christian section of the book.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\PREACH\PREACH.037

LINE: 48

In I Corinthians 15:45-47 we read “the first man Adam became a living being; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. But it is not the spiritual which is first but the physical, and then the spiritual. The first man was from earth, a man of dust; the second man is from heaven.”

I Paul speaks of a “first” and a “last” Adam. nowhere else in the New Testament can you find the expression “last Adam” – it means practically the “second man,” an expression found in verse 47. – It seems clear that the connection between the incarnate and the future “man” is present here – Also in verse 48 shows clearly the eschatological connection between the heavenly character of the

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\PREACH\PREACH.037

LINE: 605

What seems unclear, is what John himself, thought of himself – John himself nowhere gives an explanation of himself. It is always others who ascribe the role of prophet to him. But it is clear that he did not at least consider himself as the prophet of the end of time in the sense of one preparing the way for God – Evidence? Yes – Matthew 11, in which John sends his disciples to ask Jesus

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\PREACH\PREACH.058

LINE: 215

the historized gospels – he teaches and preaches the way of

the mystic Christ. His letters are replete with conceptions and terms which receive no explanation in the “traditions” of general Christianity.

Nowhere in the first two centuries can we find any trace of the later orthodox boast of “one church, one faith, always and everywhere” – on the contrary the first two centuries clearly point out a picture of many lines of evolution of belief, practice and organization. The struggle for life was

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\STDBEAR\STDBEAR.01

LINE: 323

the way! The Kingdom must be sought over all things – and all the other things by which men are preoccupied will be given to it! He avoids all titles such as Messiah and Son of David. There is no prejudice in his message – nowhere any political motivations – no political or revolutionary tactics or strategy! No coalition with other groups! He welcomed all to God and God’s Kingdom! God is not political!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\STDBEAR\STDBEAR.02

LINE: 507

To know that there is a God and the doing of His will is the proper way of life acceptable to the Great Spirit – is one thing, the doing is another. It begins by loving God and not fearing Him.

Nowhere is there a vision of the New Worlds in a Universal fellowship of races and nations, reconciled in the Love and Unity of the One Great Spirit, – beating swords into plough shares and learning war no more, and of a spiritual and physical fellowship where each and all has nothing to make them afraid, than Christian Spiritualism which offers freely to mankind the true concept of

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\STDBEAR\STDBEAR.03

LINE: 533

Civilizations new birth must begin with the Church of the All in All. This is the natural, the logical, in fact the only place for the regeneration to begin. It can begin nowhere else because there is no other place where the ideas and ideals of democracy can have their necessary and natural trying out and comparative value ascertained as in the righteous and Spiritual fellowship of a community which is truly organized on the basis of the law of love as the rule of life and which is genuine

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\STDBEAR\STDBEAR.07

LINE: 243

the Supreme Spirit be done.” It requires great caution also in this subject that we do not fall into inane fanaticism! Now fanaticism is not necessarily a sign of error. It is more likely to be a healthful than a fatal symptom. It is often the proud flesh and fever heat which indicate that healing is going on within. Nevertheless, it needs be subdued and kept down lest the truth suffer reproach. nowhere does zeal require to be so carefully tempered by knowledge as here. Novices, lifted up with pride, will lay hold of this discovery with enthusiasm and parade their faith and begin to make extravagant claims concerning it (that is, prayer). Nothing needs to be held with such quietness and reserve as this truth, and those who have the most wisdom in such matters will be found speaking in very hushed

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\TEACH\TEACH.5

LINE: 27

that God cares for man, the whole man, all of man, and not just our souls. God’s will can therefore be understood as

man’s well-being from Alpha to Omega and all that lies in between. My Spirit is my friend only it has been friendless at times in its vessel by a situation created, not by my body, per se, but by my ego. nowhere in the New Covenant does it say that Christ came to “save souls.” He came to save “men.” It is not God’s will for you to be sick or uncomfortable. His will is your well-being, all of you and not simply a part of you. If you have come to any understanding of the Message of I Paul up to this moment you will know that Jesus healed on two levels, physical and spiritual.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\TEACH\TEACH.6

LINE: 87

fulfillment, the second coming, doesn’t perturb the Church for it indeed profits thereby to chastise those of little faith because the Church maintains that the kingdom will come only when all men have been converted to their laws and faith. So where is heaven? One little sentence in the Gospel of Luke found nowhere else in the Gospels opened up Pandora’s box. “Verily I say unto thee, to-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.” Theologians zooming in on this word have been persuaded to locate the kingdom of heaven at some indefinite point in the air. The Paradise lost of

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

Judaism, the Garden of Eden, the Valhalla of the Norsemen,  
the Garden of Jenna of the Mohammedans. I could

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\TEACH\TEACH.6

LINE: 414

Paul has taught you how to pray and you have followed the  
method then your prayers have been answered and  
therefore you know something more about mysticism than  
most people. You know your soul is hid with Christ in God  
therefore you do have the creativeness and exhilaration  
necessary, which no other experience in the universe can  
give to you, to redeem your soul. Your soul is nowhere  
further away from you than Christ. It pleases God to reveal  
His Image in you. It is not something you have to achieve  
by effort but something you do have to accept by Faith and  
unite with Love. Nothing is ever “going to happen” to your  
soul but something does have to happen to you! Let go and  
let it be!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\U&P-HEAL.LAW\U&P.1

LINE: 196

.. “IF”! It’s all very simple so why do you Waste your

golden opportunity you are already protected so what are you waiting for “Procrastination” will get you nowhere and Nothing. Every time you say or think (same thing, really) it’s too hard it is! You simply defeat Yourself before you even attempt to exert the effort.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\U&P-HEAL.LAW\U&P.3

LINE: 195

You see, the Truth is the Truth is the Truth and you can do nothing to it, except abide it. It’s everywhere and nowhere! It’s everything and NOThing! Still want to search, to seek? Good Luck! Dummy! Now let’s tell the Truth about Luck! Oh, never Mind!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\U&P-HEAL.LAW\U&P.5

LINE: 409

my internal organs to support life is beyond my comprehension. Probably beyond that of any competent doctors. I know while the physician doesn’t. The secret lies in Creative Thought and Creative Imagination and in the Mind of Christ. Just there and nowhere else. I repeat. Getting here was easy. Getting out of here in good stead is

almost impossible. That’s why I Paul said don’t waste your time studying man. Study Mind. Learn mind. Practice mind. Follow Mind. Prepare, Follow, Come is all Mind, no element even of man exists therein!

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\U&P-HEAL.LAW\HEAL.1

LINE: 100

Man is a victim of his own punishment, punishment which prevails not as an Act of God but directly from an act of man. Man has refused to upgrade his level, his plane of thought. Superconsciousness knows no evil or disease or pain. It is nonexistent in reality yet real in the mental concept of man’s mind. Mind is nonexistent yet you are nowhere near ready for such truths as that. So let us go over this again quickly.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\WORKING\CREATIVE

LINE: 46

Anything whatsoever “created” through this phenomenon may be unhesitatingly Prophesized as Truthful imaginative foresight into the tomorrows.

Of course, as the Message states over and over, “you will go nowhere and do nothing” unless you are Prepared. The first step to preparation is to read the Message of I Paul -- that includes and means more than just the Communications.

|-----

FILE: MESSAGE\WORKING\ROAD

LINE: 45

following Him and His Will for a change – it’s really that simple. Higher levels of consciousness cannot be acquired from reading “silly publications” or books on mysteries. Unless you understand the Message and until you do comprehend its language, all such reading only clouds the way. They may “sound” like the Message or “read” like the Message, but they are poles apart. The “keys” lie in the Message and nowhere else. The Message must come first – until it does, we (collectively) will go nowhere – do nothing – accomplish no-thing. the Message clearly spells out all these things herein – sooner or later they will become recognizable and then action – effort – must come before we can!

Now, does all this mean endless study etc.? No! It calls for order and self-discipline – it teaches priorities – it

“Nowhere” Excerpts from The Message...

teaches “good works,” good...

